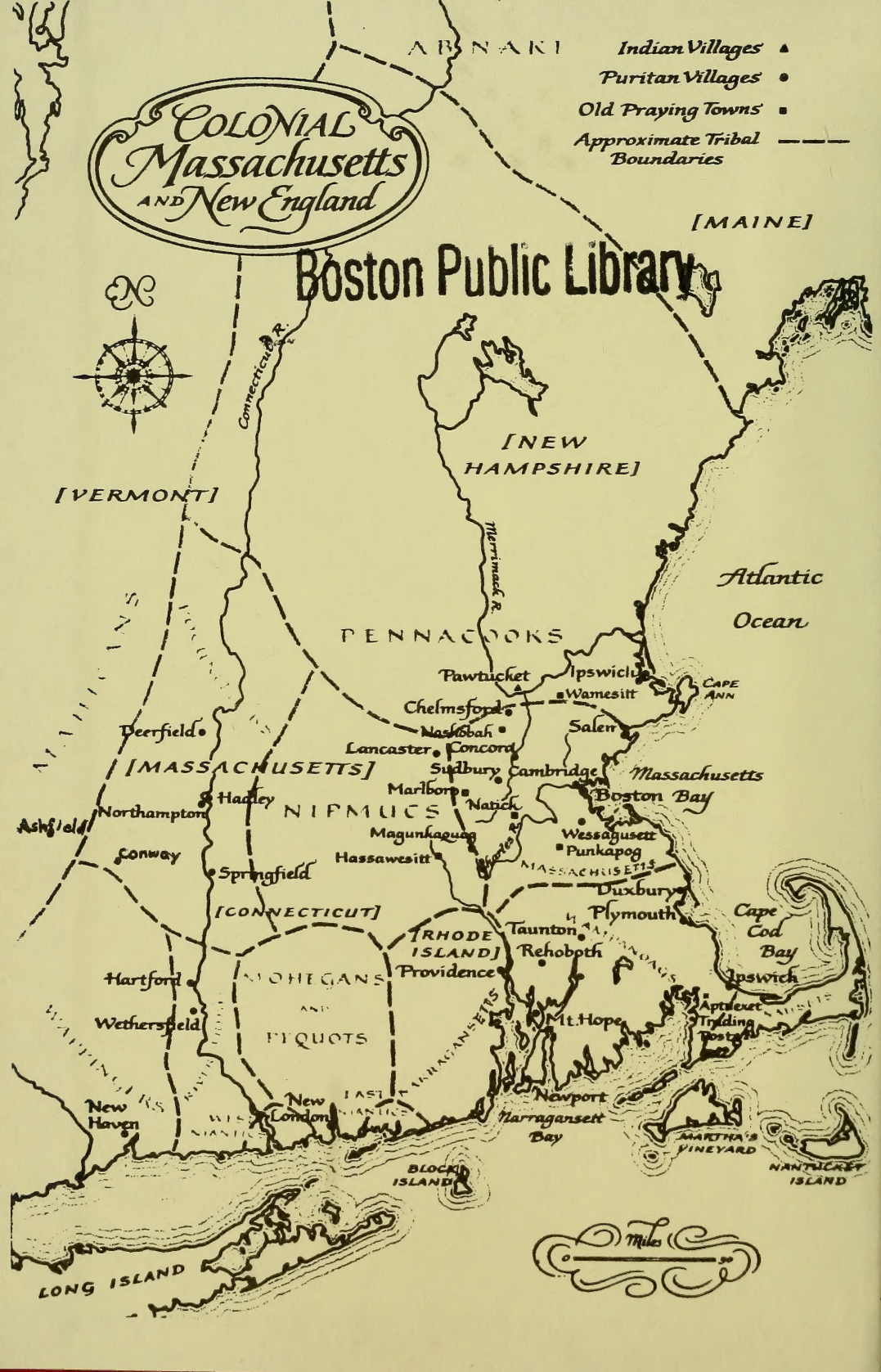
BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 9999 06663 610 9

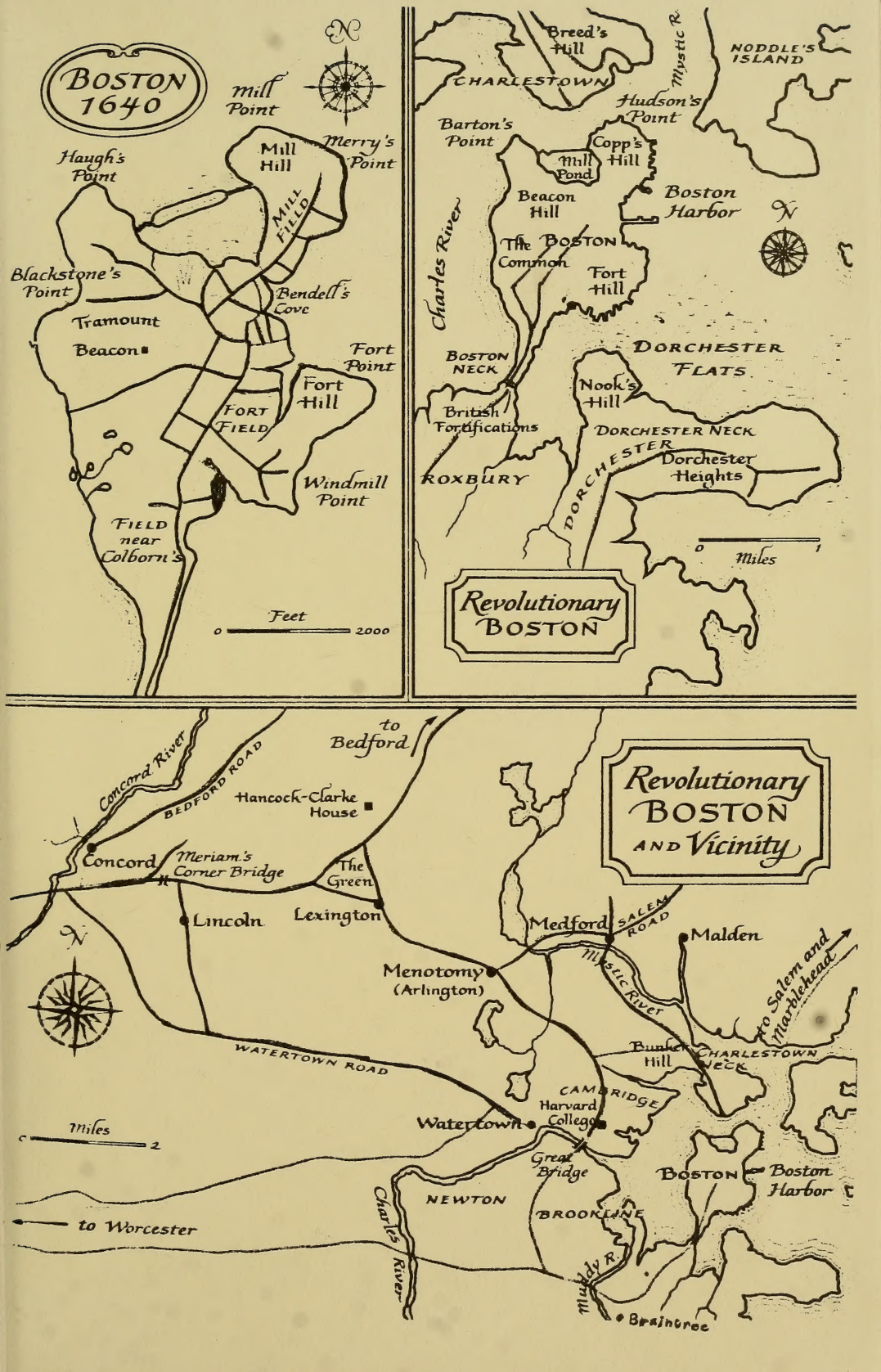
THE DESCENDANTS of JOHN PAYN

From England to America

Clyde William Payne



Boston Public Library


BOSTON 1640
Mill Point
Merry's Point
Haugh's Point
Mill Hill
Mill Field
Blackstone's Point
Bendell's Cove
Tramount
Beacon
Fort Point
Fort Hill
Fort Field
Windmill Point
Field near Colborn's
Feet
0
2000
Breed's Hill
Mystic R.
NODDLE'S ISLAND
CHARLESTOWN
Hudson's Point
Barton's Point
Copp's Hill
Mill Pond
Beacon Hill
Boston Harbor
Charles River
The Boston Common
Fort Hill
BOSTON NECK
DORCHESTER FLATS
Nook's Hill
British Fortifications
DORCHESTER NECK
Dorchester Heights
ROXBURY
DORCHESTER
0
Miles
1
Revolutionary BOSTON
Revolutionary BOSTON AND Vicinity
to Bedford
Concord River
BEDFORD ROAD
Hancock-Clarke House
Concord
Meriam's Corner Bridge
The Green
Lincoln
Lexington
Menotomy (Arlington)
WATERTOWN ROAD
Medford
SALEM ROAD
Malden
Mystic River
to Salem and Marblehead
Bunker Hill
CHARLESTOWN NECK
CAMBRIDGE
Harvard College
Watertown
Great Bridge
BOSTON
Boston Harbor
NEWTON
BROOKLINE
Charles River
Muddy R.
Braintree
Miles
2
to Worcester

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2012 with funding from
Boston Public Library

http://www.archive.org/details/descendantsofjoh00payn

THE DESCENDANTS *of* JOHN PAYN

From England to America

Clyde William Payne

GATEWAY PRESS, INC.
Baltimore 1994

KL
CS71
.P3436
1994

Copyright © 1994 by Clyde William Payne

Permission to reproduce in any form
must be secured from the author.

Please direct all correspondence and book orders to:

Clyde W. Payne
2620 Fairway Drive
York, PA 17402

Library of Congress Catalog Card Number 93-80945

Published for the author by
Gateway Press, Inc.
1001 N. Calvert Street
Baltimore, MD 21202

Printed in the United States of America

Dedication

To all past, present and future generations whose lives have been or will be touched in some measure by our Payne ancestry, this text is dedicated. And, by the grace of God, our faces will not forever be hidden "amid a crowd of stars."

When You Are Old

When you are old and gray and full of sleep
And nodding by the fire, take down this book,
And slowly read, and dream of the soft look
Your eyes had once, and of their shadows deep;

How many loved your moments of glad grace,
And loved your beauty with love false or true;
But one man loved the pilgrim soul in you,
And loved the sorrows of your changing face.

And bending down beside the glowing bars,
Murmur, a little sadly, how love fled
And paced upon the mountains overhead,
And hid his face amid a crowd of stars.

—WILLIAM BUTLER YEATS

The Bridge Builder

An old man goin' a lone highway
Came at the evening, cold and gray,
To a chasm vast and deep and wide,
The old man crossed in the twilight dim,
The sullen stream had no fears for him;
But he turned, when safe on the other side,
And built a bridge to span the tide.
"Old man," said a fellow pilgrim near,
"You are wasting strength with building here;
Your journey will end with the ending day.
You will never again pass this way;
You have crossed the chasm, deep and wide,
Why build you the bridge at the evening tide?"
"Good friend, in the path I have come," he said,
"There followed after me today, a youth,
whose feet must pass this way.
This chasm, that has been naught to me,
to that fair-haired youth may a pitfall be.
He, too, may cross in the twilight dim,
Good friend, I am building this bridge for him."

—WILL ALLEN DRUNGOOLE

My grandmother, Lillian (Jones) MacCubbin, loved poetry and collected favorites from many sources. This poem was one I found in a small scrapbook she filled with prose and poetry collected over the years. I felt it was an appropriate entry for this family history.

Contents

List of Illustrations vii

Preface viii

Notes of Explanation xiv

Abbreviations xv

I Early History of the Payne Name and Family 1

II John Payn Of Frittenden And Tenterden, Kent County, England, and His Descendants 11

III Stephen Payn 19

IV John Payne 31

V John Payne II 39

VI Nicholas Payne 53

VII Our Immigrant Ancestors and the Journey to New England 67

VIII Moses Paine of Frittenden, Kent County, England and Braintree, Massachusetts 73

IX Stephen Paine 109

X Stephen Paine II 129

XI Samuel Paine 137

XII Joseph Ruggles Paine 147

XIII Joseph Payne 163

XIV Abial Payne 175

XV Marshall B. Payne 183

XVI Clyde B. Payne 201

XVII Marshall F. Payne 223

Epilogue 249

Index 257

List of Illustrations

following page #

View of the Cassadaga Lakes from Stockton Hill About 1900 . . . . . Preface

Holdings of Pagen of Hampshire 3

Map Showing Tenterden and Frittenden 10

St. Mary's Church of Frittenden 19

St. Mildred's Church of Tenterden 74

Modern Day View of Tenterden 74

Old Braintree 1640–1792 83

The Matchlock "Musquet" 100

Graves of Joseph Ruggles and Mehitable Paine 158

Transfer of Property from Joseph Ruggles to Son Joseph 160

Map of Chautauqua County, N.Y. 164

Gravestones of Abial and Olive Payne 177

Laura (Payne) Pettit 177

Marshall B. Payne, Esther (Payne) England and John Young . . 184

Hiram Burnham and Imogene Young (Payne) Burnham . . . 184

Imogene on Her Front Porch 184

Gravestones of Marshall B. and Imogene (Young) Payne Burnham 184
Looking South on Main Street, Cassadaga about 1900 184
The Cassadaga House 184
Post Office and Hardware Store; Two Views 190
Former Hotel and Home of John H. Young at Burnhams . . . 190
Boating on the Cassadaga Lake 194
Steamer, Marion Skidmore 194
Steamer, R. S. Lillie 194
Steamer, Winifred 194
Coming Through a Channel 194
Melrose Park, Lily Dale 194
Clyde and Claude Payne 1885 202
Construction of the Pierpont Cider Mill 202
Clyde and Olive (Beebe) Payne 204
Marshall, John and Maurine Payne 204
Maurine and Leo Murtaugh 204
Summer Home in the Adirondacks 204
St. James Episcopal Church 204
The Murtaugh Graves 204
Four Generations of the Payne Family 204
The Freight Train at Burnhams 214
Clyde B. Payne in His Store at Burnhams 214
Order Form from 1918, Burnhams 214
Four Views of Payne Supply Company 217
The West Concert Band 217

Shady Side About 1894 217
The Clyde B. Payne Home on Maple Avenue, Cassadaga . . . 217
Clyde B. Payne and Author 217
Clyde B. Payne and His Children 217
Marshall F. Payne (1968) and Carol MacCubbin (1924) 224
Carol (MacCubbin) Payne 224
Marshall's Early Snowmobiles 224
Family Photo Including Four Generations 228
Our Home Constructed by Marshall Payne 236
Map Locating Payne's Motel 236
A Payne Family Picture 1993 254

View of the Cassadaga Lakes from Stockton Hill About 1900

Preface

Thomas Wolfe said it first, with the title of his famed 1940 novel: *You Can't Go Home Again.* The phrase has the ring of truth . . . and yet there is one way in which the journey home *can* be accomplished.

As Wolfe's novel made clear, we can make that homeward passage in our thoughts, anytime we wish—and sometimes, when our memories are suddenly triggered by events, at moments when we least expect it!

We can recognize the truth of this phenomenon quite easily, because each of us has at one time or other undertaken that almost mythical odyssey back to the familiar landscape that used to be home . . . only to confront there a place that now seems foreign, and only slightly familiar. The trees, houses and streets are essentially the same, but somehow they are not—which reminds us of the novelist L.P. Hartley's famous saying: "The past is a foreign country; they do things differently there."

Several years ago, like Odysseus setting sail for his homeland, I returned for a class reunion at Lawrence Park, Pa. where I'd grown up and attended school. It seemed quite exciting after twenty-five years, this chance to relive those old memories. But then the "foreigness" began. A person expects to find intact and

unchanged the school that helped mold him, that was so much more than mere wood and brick and had once seemed everlasting and immovable.

And yet, somehow, many familiar things had vanished. They had become strangely shrunken, diminished and unrecognizable. The town was peopled by strangers who trespassed on my memories. Faces, minds, bodies had altered.

I came upon vaguely familiar classmates who, by the same token, recognized me, shook my hand, slapped my back. We exchanged smiles and remarked about those "good old days", but they knew nothing of what the years had been for me, as I knew nothing of them and theirs.

We recalled the past, compared dates and occurrences, smiled with pride over children and grandchildren, then moved our separate ways, making promises to write and extending invitations to visit when in town. What I had confronted was the reality of life—the harsh facts about how mortality owns each one of us.

And yet, in another sense, perhaps the most pleasant one, we never *really* leave home, for we perpetually carry around with us the beguiling or perhaps wistful scenes of our past. They are part of our dreaming and our waking. I can see so many of those delightful sights from the front porch of Grandma Payne's house! I can hear a horse clomping up Maple Avenue in Cassadaga, pulling a wagon piled high with pea vines on its way to the cannery, and enjoy the comforting aroma of ginger cookies wafting from the warm, inviting old kitchen of Grandma MacCubbin.

I can trek up Stockton Hill, cross Mosquito Bridge where Grandma MacCubbin and I picked those luscious blackberries she magically turned into delicious pies, and then run through the woods and fields of wildflowers so I can better glimpse the three Cassadaga lakes where Grandpa Payne and I fished for "punkin seeds". None of this would be possible, of course, without my prior experience of it.

I have heard it said that most of the things one wishes for in one's life turn out to be, upon attainment, little more than muddied reflections of the original dream. And yet the joyful experience of fatherhood has been everything I ever thought it would be, only more. I have savored the richness of it, the sweetness, the fun, the fulfillment, the excitement, the day-to-day renewal. If there is anything to the notion of reincarnation, I must have done something awfully nice somewhere along the line to have been so blessed! Experiences such as these remain with you for a lifetime, and can be "revisted" whenever one wishes.

Three times it has been my joy to stand and look with awe, reverence and hope into the face of a newborn son . . . and with equal awe at two grandsons and a granddaughter. And it is always with the hope that some part of the best of me will remain. How many of us, gazing into the eyes of our beloved offspring, have echoed the yearning lines of Tennyson's Brook:

> "For men may come and men may go—
> But I go on forever."

Sometimes, when talking with my sons, I will hear in my own voice the voice of my dad echoing from all those years ago.

Yes, I can sometimes see myself in my three sons. And just a few short years ago, I was looking at their youth, their promise, their possibilities, and felt how my stake in immortality had been invested. And now I see that the pride I felt then has been fully realized, as three young men continue to build lives that fulfill their early promise.

For each of us, at the heart of all of these shared destinies, and in company with God, is our family: our fathers, mothers, grandparents, uncles and aunts—all exist forever in some part of what we are and what we do. These close family connections are as inescapable as life, as inevitable as death, and even if you somehow shut them out of your waking reveries, they remain a part of everything that moves, molds, and renews you. You live with them and they with you, and you can return "home", to some degree, whenever you wish.

Family has always been supremely important to me—and long before I ever realized it. Surely, among all the devisings of man which have managed thus far to survive, it stands high on the list of the most attractive, and chief among those worth saving. Yet many people are trying to live today without those roots that in the past afforded the reassurance of stability, permanence, and continuity. Family reunions, where generations mixed, exchanged family stories, reminisced about those wonderful bygone days, and inspected the latest additions to a growing family, are slowly fading from existence.

Yet roots in the past are a precious thing—in fact, a healthy and vital thing—for they identify and perpetuate traditions and truths which make for a meaningful and moral existence.

This family history, though it may never be completed, is my attempt to bring recorded life to the Payne family, and to honor those who came before—those who had personalities, successes, failures, disappointments, who laughed, who grieved, who were born and who died.

One of my earliest recollections of family history came from a letter written on fragile, tattered paper in beautifully shaded script-writing of the time and dated 1844. In about 1940, I made this treasured find in an old trunk on the second floor of my Grandfather Payne's store and post office in Burnhams, New York. What I had found was a "stage coach" letter written before postage stamps were issued, and sent to someone named Nancy Dunning Young.

My curiosity was further piqued when Grandpa Payne told me the letter was from my great-great-great grandmother. This one letter started me collecting anything related to our family.

Unfortunately, as with many things we develop an interest in over the years, other priorities seemed to interfere, and the "family tree", though it continued to physically grow, did not find its way into a written, organized history until fifty years later. At this time, thanks to the resources of the Family History Library of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, I located the earliest known ancestor in our family's direct line—John Payn of Frittenden, Kent County, England, and, also, the first ancestors to have arrived in America, Moses Paine and his three children, who landed in 1638.

The research work, compilation and preparation of this volume has been far more extensive a task than I could have

imagined, and it would, perhaps, seem to lack justification . . . especially if considered from a monetary perspective!

However, there are other considerations, not the least among them being the preservation for posterity of a genealogical record of our family that otherwise might have been lost. It is from this vantage point that I derive my satisfaction, and I remain convinced, today, of the great value and reward of the enterprise.

I would like to express appreciation to my wife, Peggy (Wasson) Payne, for her loyal support. Her willingness to help me locate, analyze and organize sketchy information into meaningful communication, and her willingness to serve as a constant travel companion from New York to New England, and to the scenic ancestoral homes of Frittenden and Tenterden, England, was deeply appreciated. We have spent many enjoyable hours (as well as a few trying ones) in researching and writing this book on our family.

Special thanks should go to my mother, Carol (MacCubbin) Payne, for saving all of the information about our families. Her archives included letters, books, diaries, and many pictures and other material that could easily fill additional volumes.

And finally, my sincere gratitude is extended Tom Nugent of The University of Maryland, for his skillful guidance, helpful suggestions and encouragement during the editing of the manuscript. For this, I am deeply indebted.

—CLYDE WILLIAM PAYNE

Notes Of Explanation

This Payne genealogy follows direct-line descendants only—from John Payn through Marshall F. Payne—and is arranged by generation. Each person, for example, descended from John Payn, for whom a sketch is given, is assigned a Roman and an Arabic Numeral. These serve to identify him and also to prevent confusion, particularly in sections that include others of the same name. The Roman Numeral enclosed in parenthesis indicates his generation descending from John Payn, who would be designated as (Gen. I, No. 1). The Arabic Numeral identifies the order of birth, or merely shows the number of children in the family, if the order of birth is not known. Where the separate account of an individual appears, or reference is made to a specific person, the Arabic Numeral identifies that person in his line of descent. When the name of a widow or a married woman is mentioned, her maiden name, when known, is added, enclosed in parenthesis.

In most cases, material quoted from printed sources has been presented exactly as written in the original. Where punctuation errors or spelling flaws or egregious archaisms intruded, however, the author has edited slightly, and only for the sake of clarity. In no cases has the meaning been altered by these brief editing changes.

Abbreviations

abt	=	about	gmor	=	grandmother
anc	=	ancestor	gp	=	grandparents
b	=	born	gs	=	gravestone
bd	=	birthdate	h	=	husband
bpl	=	place of birth	1/h	=	first husband
bur	=	buried	m	=	married
cem	=	cemetery	1/m	=	married first
cen	=	census	p	=	parent
ch	=	child or children	poss	=	possibly
Co	=	county	prob	=	probably
d	=	died	sis	=	sister
dau	=	daughter	s/o	=	son of
div	=	divorced	w	=	wife
dpl	=	place of death	1/w	=	first wife
gch	=	grandchildren	wid	=	widow
gf	=	grandfather	w/o	=	widow of

CHAPTER I

Early History of the Payne Name and Family

There is a time for everything,
and a season for every activity under heaven:
a time to be born and a time to die,
a time to plant and a time to uproot,
a time to kill and a time to heal,
a time to tear down and a time to build,
a time to weep and a time to laugh,
a time to mourn and a time to dance,
a time to scatter stones and a time to gather them,
a time to embrace and a time to give up,
a time to keep and a time to throw away,
a time to tear and a time to mend,
a time to be silent and a time to speak,
a time to love and a time to hate,
a time for war and a time for peace.

—ECCLESIASTES 3: 1–8

THE SURNAME OF PAYNE, however spelled (for it has had several variations) indicates a Norman origin. We know that Rollo or Rolf, Duke of Normandy, in the ninth century became a convert to Christianity. The people of his Dukedom, however,

outside of the larger communities, resisted the new religion—as is usually the case in all innovations, which first find favor in the cities, then expand gradually throughout the country. Now the word "paganus" meant originally and solely a dweller in the country, as distinguished from one who dwells in the city. So general was the refusal at first of the inhabitants of the country to accept the Christian religion, that to be a "Countryman" came simply to mean an "unbeliever," and the word "paganus" thus took on a double meaning. The name was eventually applied to all those who refused the Christian baptism.[2]

When William the Conquerer went from Normandy to England in 1066, he was accompanied by many of this class of people, and so the term became incorporated into the English language with its new meaning. About this same time, the habit of using surnames also became prevalent, and as people usually chose something with which they had a previous connection, the name of "Paganus" came into common use as a family designation. It gradually changed its form, however, to one of several variations: Pagan, Pagen, Payen, Paine, Pain, Payn or Payne.[2]

The name is found wherever the Norman exodus pervaded. In Italy, for example, it assumed the form of Paganini or Pagani.

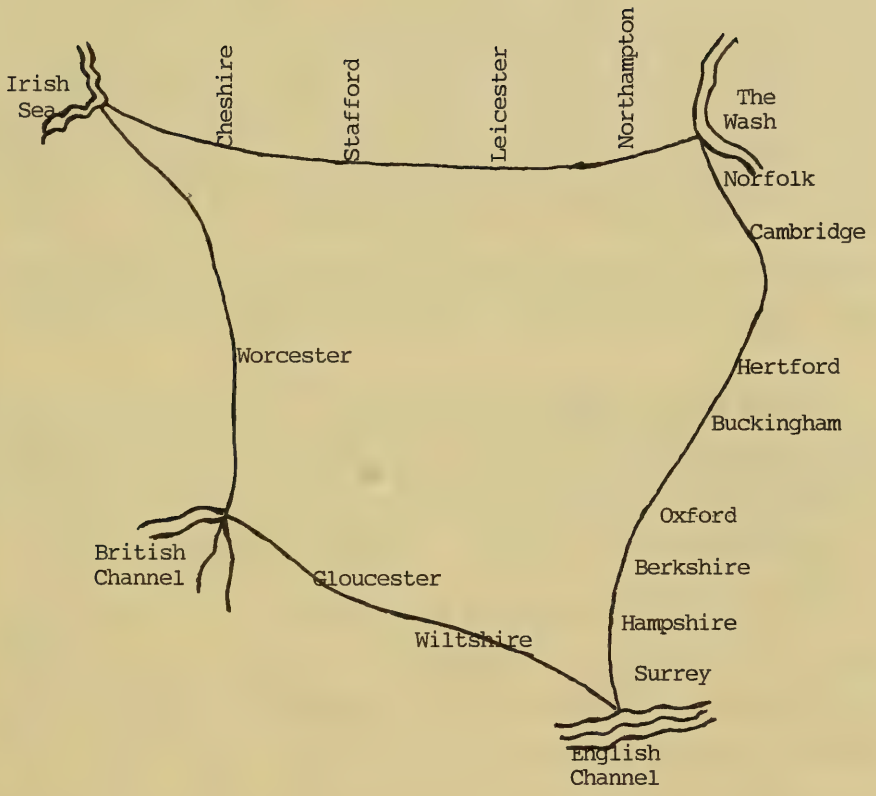
At a time when so large a proportion of men were soldiers, and the remaining inhabitants were largely countrymen, the name "Pagan" was applied rather contemptuously to all those who did not serve their King in a military fashion. After the Christian era began, the followers of Christ were always considered the "soldiers" of Christ; those who did not join His religious army were "pagans" . . . just as those who had

not belonged to the civil army were named. From this application, there was read into the word the meaning of "non-Christian"—which the word "pagan" signifies today. In this sense, the term was applied widely. The early Church called the Mohammedans "Pagans", and so did the Romans call those Norsemen who swept over Rome and her provinces. There is some question whether as a personal appellation it was first applied to one who rejected Christ, or to one who was simply a countryman. Bardsley says, "At the close of the Norman dynasty it had threatened to become one of the most familiar appellations in England, and thus while in our dictionaries, 'pagan' still represents a state of heathenism, in our directories it has long been converted to the purpose of Christianity."

No history of the Payne family would be complete without a reference to two men who made the name a famous one in the early history of England.

The first of these is "Pagen of Domesday", 1041–1086, and the second is Hugh de Payen, a crusader and founder of the Order of Knights Templar. For the following extract we are indebted to the "Paine Genealogy" by Mr. Albert W. Paine, of Bangor, Maine.

"When William the Conqueror became firmly established upon the English throne, he caused an inventory and appraisal of his Kingdom to be made, which included the names of all the land owners. Prominent among these was 'Pagen' who is reported as holder of lands either 'of the King or others,' in at least sixteen different counties, and to the number of thirty-eight or more holdings in all; and the significant remark is



Holdings of Pagen of Hampshire

added by the commissioner of returns, that 'he could go whither so ever he would'.

"These holdings were so located in different counties, that, leaving Hants or Hampshire by the Isle of Wight where the New Forest was located, he could travel north to 'the wash', on the North Sea; thence west across the island to the Irish Sea; thence south to the British Channel; thence east to the place of starting, and at every step be in a county where he owned land and consequently had right of protection."[1]

This was his peculiar baronial privilege, arising from his rank and probable connection with the king.

The *Domesday Book* includes Pagen of Hampshire among those who held land directly of the king. Records indicate that he held land in fifteen counties. The sketch above shows the position of this man's holdings in England at about 1080.

He had settled in England from Normandy before the conquest, as is plainly evidenced by the records, and was consequently there to share with the "Conqueror" the brunt of battle and the crown of success.

He died about the same time that the *Domesday Book* was compiled in 1086, leaving Edmund, his eldest son and heir, to inherit his immense estate and dignities, as well as his favor with the king. Dr. T.O. Paine examined the records of the family in the *Domesday Book* and quotes them in his article on the Paines in the "Paine Family Records". He states that "all those records referred to one man; that he had Edmund and a daughter called 'daughter of Paine' who also held land."[3]

THE CRUSADES AND HUGH DE PAYEN

Following close upon the Norman conquest of England came the Crusades, the first of which had a special importance to the Payne genealogy.

"In the year 1119, at the termination of the first crusade, the celebrated Hugh de Payen remained behind for the purpose of more securing its grand results. For long months he acted the part of guide to help guard pilgrims to the Holy Sepulchre from the attack of Saracens, and more particularly, helping those pilgrims needing aid and conduct to their journey's end, crossing of the Jordan to the City of Jerusalem.

"For this purpose he organized a force to the occasion and diligently attended to the work. In company with Godfrey de St. Omer, he instituted an order known as the Templars of the Cross, the sole object of which was to further the great objects of the Crusaders' mission by protecting the Holy Places and rendering safe the journey of all pilgrims to the Holy Shrine."[(2)]

According to Dr. Paine, "The original organization embraced only seven others besides themselves. They were both poor, but their undertaking was patronized by the King of Jerusalem, Baldwin II, who not only gave them his countenance, but assigned to them their lodgings in his palace, and made them the recipients of his personal favor and society. Of their poverty they made no secret, but emblazoned it on their seal by adopting as a device 'a horse with two riders.'

"From this small beginning, the order soon began to extend its power until it came to be the most powerful and opulent of all organizations, then probably existing in the world; control-

ling the fate of nations, and even demanding and receiving from the Pope an acknowledgment of its asserted rights. Its original organization was 1178 A.D., and was continued to exist until 1312, nearly two centuries, when after five or six years of violent action, Philip the Fair of France, and Pope Clement V, succeeded in abolishing it, and appropriating its immense possessions to the use of the various sovereigns of the different nations where they were deposited. In Portugal, the order still exists, under the name of 'Knights of Christ.'

"The pledge of every Templer bound him to defend at the peril of his life the mysteries of the Christian faith, to perform military service beyond the seas whenever called upon to do so, and 'never to fly before three Infidels even when alone.'

"During the ages while the order had life, and even since, the two original founders have been celebrated for their work as originators, even after their death, as its protectors and guardians."

Locating Hugh de Payen's place genealogically, among the numerous branches of the Family, is a matter of much interest.

That he was a Norman is very clear, for at that early day the name had not gone beyond the field of its origin; in fact only a single generation or two had then passed since surnames had been first adopted. His name, too, indicates that he was the son of a father who bore the same name, and who lived necessarily during the war and reign of the Conqueror. He was, too, as a Norman in the Crusade, one of the soldiers or followers of Robert the Duke.

The suddenness and success with which he entered upon his great work and organized the order and advanced its cause,

show most conclusively that he must have had what is often spoken of as a "good start" in life.

Dr. Paine states that a "footman's or private's position in an army is ever a place not only of difficulty, but of improbability, from which to arise at once to eminence or favor.

"In order to do this, he must have had the prestige of noble birth, or other extra merit, to give him such an impetus as he actually enjoyed."[2]

We must assume that only in this way could he have so suddenly reached the high pinnacle of fame and favor at which he arrived. This conclusion is supported by the earlier description of his favor with Baldwin II, King of Jerusalem, who gave him lodgings in his palace, and the prestige of his high office.

From the reading of Domesday, Dr. Paine finds that Pagen or Payen was one of William the Conqueror's chief barons, on whom he especially bestowed his favors; and Robert, the Duke, under whom Hugh went to the Crusades, was the son of the Conqueror, thus placing the two sons (if they actually *were* sons) in direct communication with each other. Dr. Paine's conclusion is certainly very natural and probable, that "Hugh de Payen (the son of Payen) was really the son of him of Domesday, Edmund being his oldest son and heir. That he was poor, though the son of a rich father, is readily explainable by the fact of the then prevailing law of primogeniture, which gave the whole inheritance to the oldest son, and left the younger poor, a fact of so much importance that it led in the days of heraldry to the adoption of a particular feature on the coat of arms to express it. This feature was the placing on the shield

a Martlet, a footless bird, to indicate that the party had no land to stand on, and consequently no use of feet."

One of the extracts from Domesday is the following: "Edmund, the son of Pagen, holds of the king, and Hugh holds of him."

Dr. Paine concludes: "That this Hugh thus spoken of was Hugh de Payen, cannot certainly be determined, but the fact that his surname is not given, but simply his Christian name, rather implies that his surname was the same as his under whom he held, and who is related as being 'the son of Pagen.'"[2]

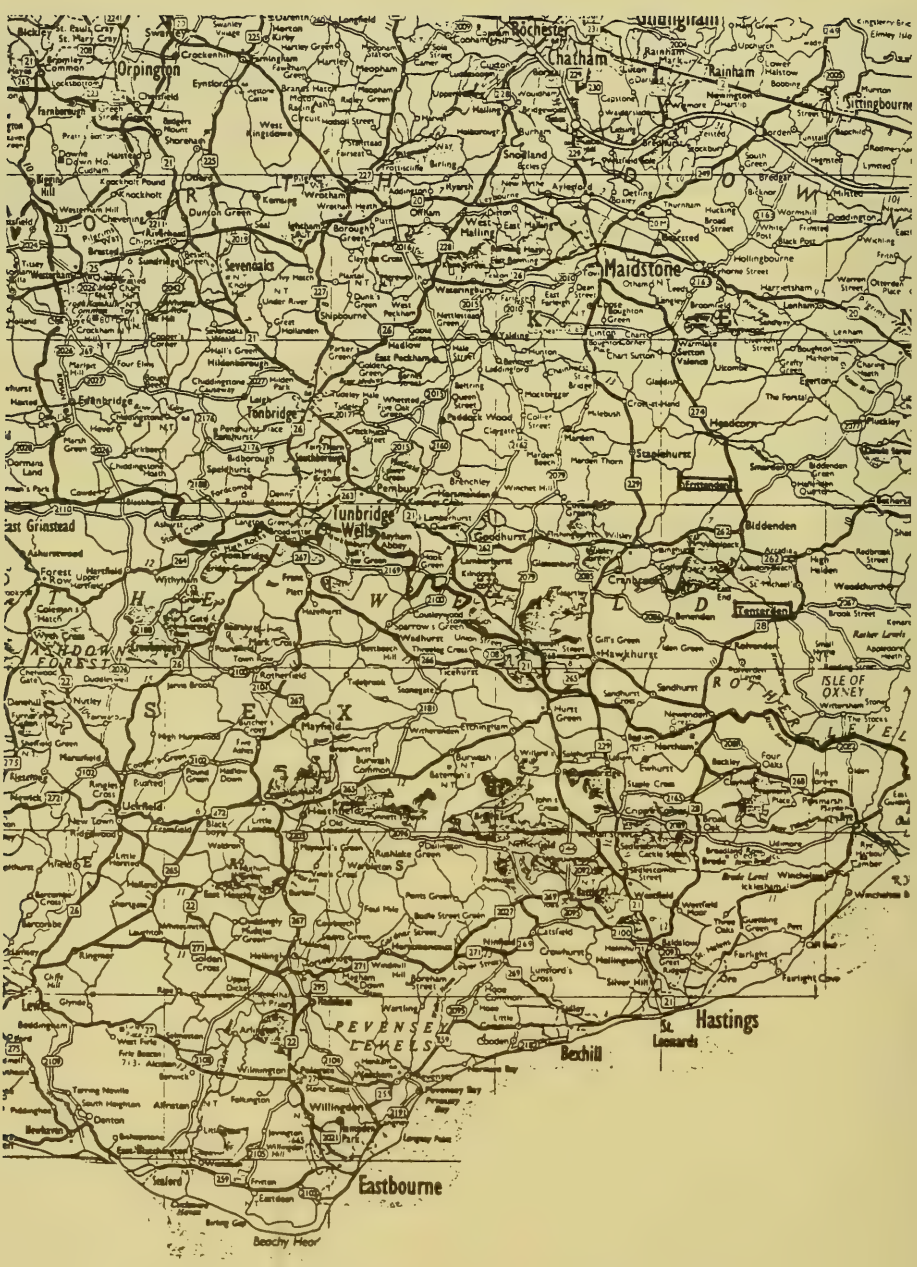
This conclusion can hardly be resisted, that the great Crusader was the son of him on whom King William so abundantly showered his favors, and that it was this favor with King William which opened the palace doors of King Baldwin at Jerusalem, and gave to the poor son a home and the prestige of his influence and his power, as Dr. Paine has previously related.

REFERENCES FOR THIS CHAPTER

1. Paine, A.W., *Paine Genealogy*. Quoted from Mary Lovering Holman's *The Paynes of England and Normandy*. pp. 3,4,11.

2. Paine, H.D., *Paine Family Records*, 1882-83.

3. Paine, T.O., *Paine Family Records*.



Map showing Tenterden and Frittenden, Kent Co., England

CHAPTER II

John Payn (Gen. I, No. 1) and His Descendants

Mortal I know I am, short lived;
and yet whenever,
I watch the multitude of swirling stars,
then I no longer tread this earth,
but rise to feast
with God, and enjoy the food of
the immortals.

—PTOLEMY, more than 1000 years ago

JOHN PAYN (Gen. I, No. 1), b. abt. 1420; Frittenden, Kent County, England; d. 12 April 1463; Frittenden; m. Joanne _____ abt. 1442; will dtd. April 1463.

Residence: Frittenden, Kent County, England.

Authority: *Paine Family Records*, (H.D. Paine, pp. 11–13; Archdeaconry of Canterbury, Vol. 1, fo. 1), Translated from the Latin.[1]

GENERATION II

Descendants of:

John (Gen. I, No. 1) and Joanne _____ Payn.

2. Edmund, b. abt. 1442; m. Agnes _____. Will dated 20 February 1499/1500.
3. Elizabeth.
4. STEPHEN, b. abt. 1455; d. abt. 1505. Our direct-line descendant.

There has been a great deal of speculation as to the English ancestry of Moses Paine (Gen. VI., No 28), of Braintree, Massachusetts, our first ancestor to settle in America. It was not until 1912 that the discovery of his ancestry and place of emigration was found by Miss Elizabeth French, a genealogist associated with the New England Genealogical and Historical Society. Thanks to her efforts and the subsequent efforts of H.D. Paine, we have the line established back to "John Payn of Fyrthenden." (Gen. I, No. 1). [3]

By means of wills, direct lineage of the Payne family can be traced through six early generations. Although this lineage begins about 1420, the following record indicates that "on June 25, 1435, a pardon was granted to William Appliby of Bidynden, County Kent, for not appearing before Robert Hull and his fellows, justices of the Kings Bench of his late Majesty Henry IV (reigned 1412–1422), to answer Richard Payn, later chamberlain of the Bishop for St. Davids and Stephen Payn, brother of the said Payn, executors of the will of John Payn, chamberlain of the Bishop of St. Davids, touching a plea that he render 6–8–0." [4]

From the preceding record, we can presume that John's father was either Richard or Stephen Payn, and from his will we may conclude that his mother's name was Agnes. Unfortunately, very little else is available aside from John's will, that would disclose some of the personal details of the lives of our family at that time. However, as ancestors, they are close to us; they live on and our modern-day interest in them is fulfillment of the prophecy of Malachi:

> And he shall turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the hearts of children to their fathers. . . .

With the availability of historical sources that describe similar families living at the time, we can make reasonable assumptions as to how our family worked, lived, slept and ate during six generations of Paynes living in Kent County, England, from about 1420 to 1638.

We are fortunate to have John (Gen. I, No. 1) Payn's will, since the keeping of parish registers of christenings, marriages, and burials did not officially begin until 1538 by order of the King, but even then, not all parishes began recording this information immediately. John's will was dated 1463, so we are indeed fortunate. The parish register provided the first complete record that had ever been kept of these events and included records of all families, both rich and poor.

Some historians say that the parish church was better attended in this century. This may have been because the ministers and churchwardens were required to report absentees and such people were punished in the ecclesiastical courts. The punishment for working on Sundays was that "the offender had to walk in front of the Sunday church procession, receive two beatings with a staff and pay a fine." [2]

Research tells us that the typical church, St. Mary's in Frittenden being no exception, was of the perpendicular Gothic style, a style which was entirely English and owed nothing to European influence. It had a large hall, ideally suited for preaching, which was well-lighted by its large windows. Especially important was the fact that this spacious enclosure gave to everyone who sat in it a good view of the priest at the high altar. St. Mary's Church, where many generations of Paynes were baptized and worshipped, is still located in Frittenden,

although we understand it was rebuilt in 1799. The existing base of the tower, however, may have been a part of the original structure. Frittenden was a beautiful, very small village, and the church an attractive stone structure with stained glass windows. Many districts of Britain were, of course, still poor and could not afford to finance the building of new and larger churches, but in the principal wool-producing areas, such as Kent, expenses were no object. This was a time when merchants and farmers were incredibly wealthy and counted it a benefit to their immortal souls to contribute to the raising of expansive buildings worthy of the worship of God. Competition between parishes was not uncommon. [2]

What follows is the will of "John Payn of Ffrythenden Dated 12 April 1463," translated from the Latin.

> "After my death my foefees shall grant to Joane my wife and her heirs eight pieces of land and meadow called Cehetefeld, Tweymedys, Johanmeds, LeBroke, Gretebrodefeld, Lytybrodefeld, and Stonefeld, containing thirty acres of land in Ffrythenden upon the dens of Bubherst and Bokherst, during the life of Agnes my mother, to provide the said Agnes with sufficient meat and drink, clothing, shoes and all other necessaries, if the said Agnes be willing to dwell with Joane, but if not then my foefees shall deliver those eight pieces of land to Agnes my mother during her life to provide those things as she pleases. At the death of Agnes my mother, Joane my wife and Edmund my son shall each of them have half of

the said lands and at the death of Joane my wife, my son Edmund shall have them all. At the Feast of St. Michael next after my death my foefees shall enfeoff my son Edmund in my messuage at Bokherst and in all other lands meadows and gardens upon the den of Bokherst, to him his heirs and assigns forever. Except one piece of land situated upon the den of Bokherst called le Fyveacrys, the profits of which land and five pieces of land situated in Ulcombe upon the den of Boycote, shall go to my wife Joane until my daughter Elizabeth shall be married and then my foefees shall sell the said land and of the money pay 10 pds. and the residue to my wife Joane. My wife Joane to receive the profits of all my lands upon the den of Perseregge until Stephen my son comes to the age of twenty years and then my foefees to deliver to him and his heirs forever four pieces of land containing ten acres upon the den of Peseregge, viz. to the highway to the south. All my other lands upon the said den of Peseregge to my wife for life and after her death to go to my son Stephen and his heirs forever. And if he die within the age of twenty years then my wife Joane to have the four pieces containing ten acres, situated south to the highway and all other lands upon the den of Peseregge. If both my sons die without lawful issue, then after the death of my wife all my lands to be sold and the money to be used for a priest to sing in the church of

> Ffrethyden for three years 20 pds. praying for my sould and my parents' souls, five marks to the repair of the bad roads between Haddyscrosse and Stapylherst and five marks to the marriage of poor maids of the parish of Ffrethynden."
>
> (No probate) [1]

According to the will, dated 12 April 1463, John Payn had considerable land wealth for this period of time. And, according to its provisions, he granted his wife, Joanne, and his heirs, "Eight pieces of land and meadow." An interesting feature of this provison of the will was John's wish to provide his mother, Agnes, with the necessities if she were willing to dwell with his wife, Joanne. If not, then the "eight pieces of land" were to revert directly to his mother until her death, when the "eight pieces of land" would revert to his wife and son Edmund, to be divided equally.

John apparently felt obliged to properly care for and support his family upon his death, and according to the terms of his will, did just that, for other lands were named and daughter and sons specified as recipients of them. If his sons, Edmund and Stephen, should die without issue, then the lands were to be sold and money used by a priest in the Church of Frittenden to pray for his soul and that of his parents. Five marks were to be used to pay for the repair of bad roads, and five marks to be used to aid "the marriage of poor maids" of Frittenden—a most interesting inclusion in his will.

REFERENCES FOR THIS CHAPTER

1. *Archdeaconry of Canterbury*, Vol. 1, Fo. 1.

2. Lincoln, E.F., *Medieval Legacy*. London: MacGibbon & Kee, 1961. p. 162.

3. Paine, H.D., *Paine Family Records, 1882–1883*. p. 11–13.

4. *Patent Rolls, 13 Hen. VI, n. 32.*

CHAPTER III

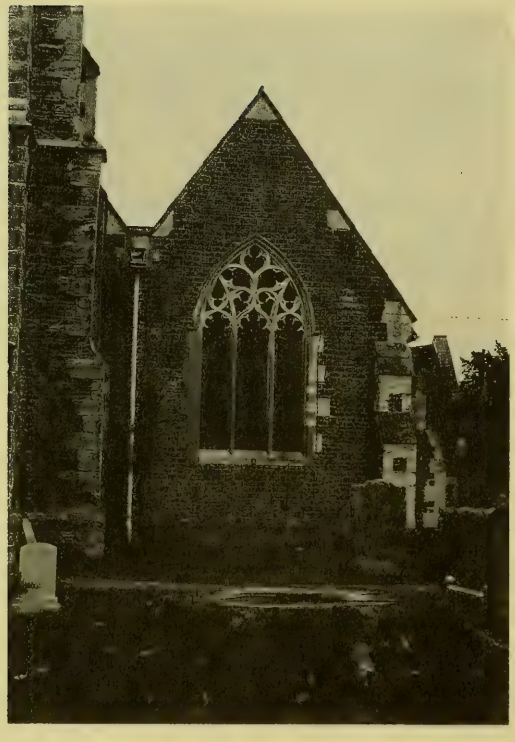
Stephen Payn (Gen. II, No. 4) and His Descendants

This royal throne of kings, this scepter'd isle.
This earth of majesty, this seat of Mars,
This other Eden, demi-paradise,
This fortress built by nature for herself
Against infection and the hand of war,
This happy breed of men, this little world,
This precious stone set in a silver sea,
Which serves it in the office of a wall
Or as a moat defensive to a house,
Against the envy of less happier lands,
This blessed plot, this earth, this realm,
This England.

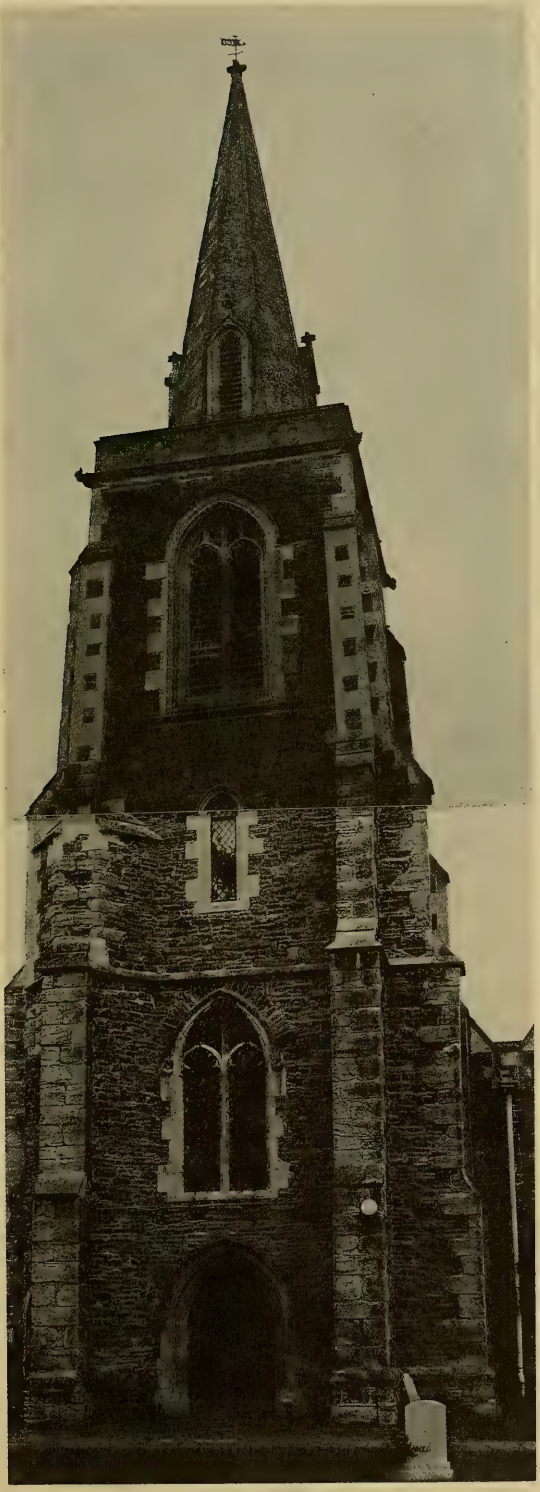
—SHAKESPEARE, *Richard III*

STEPHEN PAYN (Gen. II, No. 4), b. abt. 1455; Frittenden, Kent County, England; d. 1505 (will dtd. 1505; 1/m _____(Webb), abt. 1478; 2/m Johanne_____, abt. 1488. All children prob. born in Frittenden, Kent Co., England.

Residence: Frittenden, Kent County, England.



Three views of St. Mary's Church in Frittenden, Kent County, England, where five generations of Paynes worshipped and are buried.



Authority: Paine Family Records, (H.D. Paine, pp. 13–16); Archdeaconry of Canterbury, (Vol. 10, fo. 1), Translated from the Latin.

GENERATION III

Descendants of:

Stephen (Gen. II, No. 4), and 1/m, given name unk., prob. a dau. of John Webb of Frittenden, Kent Co., England.

5. Johanne, b. prob. abt. 1480.
6. JOHN, b. prob. abt. 1483. Direct-line descendant.
7. Edmund, b. prb. abt. 1485, d. abt. 1518, will dated 1516; m. abt. 1508, Godleve _____.

   Children:

   a. Thomas, b. abt. 1510.
   b. Godleve, living 1526.
   c. Elizabeth, living 1526.
   d. Child, unk. b. abt. 1516.

Stephen (Gen. II, No. 4), and 2/m Johanne Payn.

8. James, b. prob. abt. 1490; d. 1562, Faversham, England; m. Elizabeth _____.

   Children:

   a. Margaret, b. abt. 1515.

9. Thomas, b. prob. abt. 1493.
10. Stephen, b. prob. abt. 1495; d. abt. 1553. Will dtd. 1553; Staplehurst; m. abt. 1520, Agnes _____.

Children:

a. John, born abt. 1521, d. abt. 1566, testate; m. 16 July 1553, Staplehurst, England; m. Margery Sayer of Biddenton, Kent County, England, who 2/m 26 May 1567, Staplehurst, George Wyborne, living 1566.

b. Katherine, born. abt. 1524; m. 25 January 1544–45, Staplehurst, John Turner and had Susanne Turner.

11. Etc. other children. Stephen speaks of his daughters, and the daughters of his last wife.[2]

Stephen Payn (Gen. II, No. 4) was born to John (Gen. I, No. 1) and Johanne Payn at the beginning of the thirty-year civil war in England, known as The War of the Roses, in 1455. During those thirty years, we have no way of knowing the strength of, or even *where* Stephen's sympathies lay, or whether or not he participated in the actual conflict. We do know that many of our ancestors probably understood little of the issues at stake.

There were fourteen battles in the war, and it is said that at the Battle of Towton, more men were killed than in the preceding forty years of fighting in France. It is also said that eight princes of royal blood and half of all the nobility were killed during the war.

Europe at the time of Stephen's generation was gaining an increasing appreciation of music, writing, painting and other arts, and knowledge that had been lost centuries before was being rediscovered. This period of European advance in the arts, known as the Renaissance or "rebirth", lasted from the thirteenth to the sixteenth centuries. In England, English replaced French and Latin in the late fourteenth century in law and the literature of Chaucer, 1340–1400, and an English translation of the Bible was begun by Wycliffe in the 1380's.

Stephen was about twelve when Erasmus was born in 1447. The latter came to England in 1497 and met Sir Thomas More and Dean Colet. The influence of these men was to be tremendous, and they were all very learned, sincere, and good. Erasmus said: "I have given up my whole soul to Greek learning, and as soon as I get any money I shall buy Greek

books, and then I shall buy some clothes." To Colet and Erasmus, the command of Greek meant that they could study the Gospels from the original sources. We must remember that though these men wished to reform the Church, they had no desire to break away from its teaching; the direction the Reformation took in the end was repugnant to them, and Sir Thomas More laid down his life rather than surrender his principles.

There is an interesting account of a visit paid by Erasmus and Colet to Becket's tomb at Canterbury. They saw a crowd of pilgrims moved to ecstasy at the sight of a handkerchief that had belonged to the saint, which the monk in charge allowed the people to kiss. Erasmus scoffed at this superstition, however, and pointed out that even if genuine, the scrap of cloth had only served for the saint to wipe his nose upon, and he and Colet offended the custodian by saying so. Later, Erasmus was to write: "We kiss the old shoes of the saints, but we never read their works." (4)

While very few people could read in his father's lifetime, Stephen's generation would have noticed an increase in the number of schools, with many new ones being founded by town guilds and wealthy merchants. There was also an increase in the number of private elementary schools, and with this increase in education, many more people were reading the Holy Bible and judging for themselves in matters of faith.

I shall conclude this discussion of Stephen Payn's generation by including a copy of his will, which has been translated from the Latin, and is presented as found.

The Will of Stephen Payn of Frittenden, Kent

"IN DEI NOIE AMEN tercio menfis Maij Anno dim' Millimo quingeucefimo quinto Ego Stephus payn of ffretynden hole of mynde & in gode remenbaunce beyng make my teftament in this man' as followeth; firft I Comend my Foule to almighti god to our lady & to all the holy company of heven my body to be buried in the Chercheyard of ffretynden afforfeid. Alfo I bequeith to the hight awter ther for tythes & offeryngs for gotten xii (d) Also to the Rode leyght iiij (d) Alfo to ouer lady leygth in hye Chaunfell iij (d) Also to the light of feynt Stephyn iiij (d) Alfo to the leythes of feynt Thomas & feynt xpofer eu'y of them ij (d) Alfo to the makyng of the new beme iij (s) iiij (d) the which is yet to pay of that P pmyfed thereto Alfo fuche goodes that John Webb bequeith vnto John Edmunde & Johanne my chyldern I will it be delyu'ed vnto them Alfo I will that after the difceffe of my wyff Johanne mythouther fhall haue her coralbeds alfo I will that all my meauable Goods fhall pay my dettes & my bequeithes & the Charges of my burying. The refydue of my meauable goods Aboue my dettes & bequeithis ffirft paid & content I bequeithe to JoHanne my wyff and after her difceffe I will the ftof of howfhold vnto the Chyldern of her & me laufully begotten The which Johane my wyff & Thomas Payn my fon I make & ordeyn my executours & Ser William Ketchfden pfon of

ffrethynden ou'feer This Wittness Thomas lefted Nicholas Webbe Richard Doggett and other moo.

"THIS IS THE LAST will of me Stephn' payn be me pfonally made & declared the iij (de) day of May the yer of god aboue wrytten & the xx (ti) yer of the Rayne of Kyng Henry the VII, of all my lands & tent's lying & beyng w (th) in the pyfche of ffrethynden aforefeid ffirft I will that my feoffes fhall fuffer Johanne my wyff to haue & occupy my mefuage & all my lands lying thereto vppon perferegge aboue fhamelefords lane and a pece of land Called hertiffeld & the lytlyl Goft above w (t) the wey thereto owt of hertiffeld t'me of her naturall lyff paying the lords rent and kepe due repacon without ftrepe & waft. The refydue of my lands called pelles & paynes fhall go to ferme xij yeres next after my defceffe & my wyff for to take pfitte of all the hoole lands fro the tyme of my deceffe till mighelmas next after the date of my wyll & then to take to ferme & my wyff to take pfitt of the ij firft yeres or els to occupy hit her felffe for to kepe w (t) her Chyldern and myn and the other x yer the pfittes comyng thereof Aboue all Charges in the forfeid x yeres I will that hit fhall go vnto my thouthers mariage to eche of them by evyn porcions Except Johanne my thouther fhall haue but xiij (s) iij (d) thereof & no more and yf any of my other thouthers difceffe vn'maried I will her ptus be devyded among them that be alyve when they be maried or afterward

as faft as hit may aryfe of the ferme and yf all my thouther dye of my laft wyff vn'maried & within the age of xxviij yeres then I will v marke fhall go to an honeft preft for to fynge for ouer fowles in the Cherch of ffretynden and v marke mor' of the fame money I will hit fhall go to the mofte neds of the Cherch aforfeid. The refydew of the money when all Cofts & Chargs be done fhall remayne to my next heires ffurthur mor I will that the forfeid lands Called pellys and paynes after the xij yer aboufeid fhall remayne vnto all my fonnys that I haue by Johanne my wyff and after the deceffe of Johanne my wyff ther mother I will that they fhall haue the hole tents vppon peferegge to them in fe fimple and yff all they deceffe without heires of ther bodies lawfully begotten within the age of xxviij yeres I will it fhall remayn to John & Edmu'de payn my fonnys that I had by me firft wiff in fe fimpill ferthermore I will that all fuche land as dea'dit to me by the laft will of Edmunde payn my brother after the dyfceffe of his wyff lying vppon the dennys of Bocherft & Bubbeherft. I will it fhall remayne to John & Edmu'de payn my fonnys Except ferten lands lying at Cothyngs land end that is to fey the Booke the whetefeld the ij yendermeds w (t) a grove the Jon' Broke and ij pecs of land lying at the fouthe fyde of Cotyngs lane. The Stonefeld & the brode feld next therto them I will to all my fonnys be Johanne my wyff and yf all be alyve and yf all be defeffed ou' to

tweyn' then I will all the hole lands vpon the dennys of Buccherft & Bubbebeherft fhalbe hole vn to John & Edmu'de payn my fonnys in fefimpill and yf bothe of them dye w (t) in the age of xxviij yeres w (t) out laufull heyres of their bodyes laufully begotten then I will it fhall remayne to all my other fonnes in fefimple and yf any of all my fonnys mary within the age of xxviij yeres aforefeid I will that they fhall make theyer wyfes a lawfull joynter in certain lands for t'me of lyfe and if any of my fonnys deye withyn the age of xxviij yeres afforfeid w (t) out laufull heires I will that after the difceffe of the wiff or wiffes all fuche lands that they be a dued in fhall remayne ageyne accordyng to my will Afforfeid fferthermor I will that and yf all my fonnys deceffe within the age of xxviij (ti) yer & without heyres of there bodyes lawfully begotten that then I will ther fhall go x marke to an honeft preft to fyng for my foule my frends & all Cryften fowles in the Cherch of frethynden an hole yer And x marke vnto moft neds of the Cherche of ffrethynden afforfeid alfo I will thys feid xx (ti) marke fhall Aryfe of the ferme of all the hole lands yff it come fo to And the refydue of all my lands I will it remayne to all my thouthers in fefimple fferther mor I will that all fuche Charge as my Brother Edmu'de Payne hath leyde be hys will after hys wyfe's deceffe vppon the hole tenement of Buccherft & bubbeherft. I will it fhalbe paid of the ferme of the hole tene-

ment or hit be depted Alfo I will that the lytill Gardyn' at the ftone croffe be fold ou' to the beft price & the money therof comyng I will iiij (s) iiij (d) vnto neds of the Cherche of ffrethynden So that Thomas Webbe feynde the mene for to pay the iij (s) iiij (d) that I ow to the makyng of the New beme of the money of Wodeherft or ellis the iij (s) iij (d) of the money of Wodeherft or ellis the iij (s) iiij (d) of the gardyn fhall payne it ou' to the beme. The refydue of the money comyng I will it to Johanne my wyff for to feynde with my Chyldern & hers Wittnefs Abouefeid."

The preceding will was proved 21 October 1505 and commission issued to the executors named in the will.[1]

Apparently, Stephen made every effort to be fair regarding the distribution of his estate. His wife, Johanne, children, possible grandchildren, and debts owed appeared to be fairly and justly provided for in this lengthy will.

He also took care of his Christian responsibilities by designating specified amounts of money to the "Cherch of ffretynden" and to an "honeft preft to fyng for my foule my frends & all Cryften fowles in the Cherch of frethynden an hole yer".

Stephen provided well for his family by willing directly to his wife, Johanne, a great deal of property, and provided equal portions of land to his children.

The "coralbeds", obviously a significant possession, were willed directly to his daughter, Johanne (Gen. III, No. 5). Evidently, they formed a meaningful item of ownership.

REFERENCES FOR THIS CHAPTER

1. *Archdeaconry of Canterbury*, Vol. 10, fo.1.

2. Jacobus, Donald L. *American Genealogist.* Picton Press, Vol. 21–23. 1989. p. 183.

3. Paine, H.D. *Paine Family Records*, 1882–83, pp. 13–16.

4. Quinnel, Marjorie, *A History of Everyday Things in England 1066–1499.* New York: Charles Scribner's Sons. 1918. p. 12.

CHAPTER IV

John Payne (Gen. III, No. 5) and His Descendants

There is no land like England,
Where'er the light of day may be;
There are no hearts like English hearts,
Such hearts of oak as they be;
There is no land like England,
Where'er the light of day may be!
And these will strike for England
And man and maid be free
To foil and spoil the tyrant
Beneath the greenwood tree.

—TENNYSON, *Forester's Song*

JOHN PAYNE (Gen. III, No. 5), b. abt. 1483, Frittenden, Kent County, England; d. before 1526 (No Will Recorded); 1/m Unknown; 2/m _____Buchorn, before 1525.

Residence: Frittenden, Kent County, England.

Authority: Holman, M.L., *American Genealogist, Vol. 21*, p. 183.

GENERATION IV

Descendants of:

John (Gen. III, No. 5) and _____ Paine.

11. Elizabeth, (Gen. IV, No. 11), b. 1508, the testator of 1526.
12. JOHN (Gen. IV, No. 12), b. abt. 1510; m. Jane Couchman of Frittenden, Kent Co., England. Direct-line descendant.
13. Johane (Gen. IV, No. 13), b. abt. 1514.

The exact date when JOHN PAYNE (Gen. III, No. 5) died is not known. He also left no will, so it was difficult obtaining any information that would more personalize him. Fortunately, his daughter Elizabeth (Gen. IV, No. 11) did leave a will, and this provided some insight into a portion of the family. Elizabeth was but eighteen when she recorded her will, probably because she was ill, for she died shortly thereafter.

The Will of Elizabeth Payne of Frittenden, Kent

"The will of Elizabeth Payne of Frytynden being the age of XVIII years, 23 September 1526. To be buried in the church yard of our Lady of Frytynden. To the high alter there, 4d. To two of my uncle's children Godleve and Elizabeth 3s. 4d. each. To a priest to read and sing in the church of Frytynden for the souls of me, my brethren and sisters, 6s. 8d. To my Grandame 6s. 8d. To Modre Saunder and other woman that keeps me in sickness 3s. 4d. each. I will that 6s. 8d. be charitably disposed in priests clerks and poor persons at my burying, and at my months day in like manner 6s. 8d.

"To Sir Nicholas Jackson to pray for me 14s. 8d. To John Taylor 3s. 4d. To John Reve 3s. 4d. To the mending of the foul way at Bukhert Brigge 6s. 8d. To a priest to say a trentall of thirty masses 10s. To my father in law called Buchorn 6s. 8d.

> The residue of all my goods, my bequests and testaments fulfilled I give to Johane my sister and if she die within age and without heirs of her body lawfully begotten, I commit the said goods to be disposed in charitable deeds for the health of my soul and all Christian souls by the discretion of Sir Nicholas Jackson and John Taylor whom I make my sole executor [sic] and they to have the keeping of my goods until Johane my sister come to her age of sixteen years if she live.
>
> "Witnesses: John Taylor, Richard Ford, and James Reve. Proved 8 October 1527 by Sir Nicholas Jackson, the executor named in the will." (1)

The "Church of Frytynden", as a noted recipient of a portion of Elizabeth's will, had a great influence on her life as well as on the lives of our other ancestors, for it was here that life centered—social as well as religious —and all benefited.

According to C.F. Jordan in his *Social Institutions of Kent*, 1480–1660, Kent County, where our branch of the Paine family resided, was one of the richest and most popular counties, remarkable for the size and spirit of its yeomanry, and this was reflected in the large number of yeoman benefactors. Kent found itself with eighty-five parishes rich in charitable funds, with just over a hundred adequately provided; meanwhile a hundred and thirty rural parishes, thinly populated, had funds ranging up to 100 pds. Altogether, some two hundred and forty parishes had reasonable provisions of their own already, apart

from what government or county might do, for the relief of distressing poverty. All these funds had come from private benefactors, to which, in well-off Kent, even yeomen greatly contributed. Social obligations were honored and acted upon by all classes, according to their means. [6]

Edward IV died in 1483, and his brother, Richard III, one of the most consummate scoundrels in history, succeeded to the throne after murdering Edward V, and Richard, Duke of York. That was also the year of John Payne's (Gen. III, No. 5) birth in Frittenden. In addition, this period of time saw the beginning of the Reformation, even as Caxton set up his printing-press at Westminster, and so knowledge was spread. [5]

Unfortunately, we have only the records of the time to tell us what our ancestors were like and how they related to everyday things. Since our family was not born of royalty, we have few details of how the Payne family lived, how they felt about the politics of the time, and more commonplace interests, such as what their clothing looked like, recreational pursuits, and myriad other details long since forgotten in time. However, Marjorie Quennell provides some detailed descriptions of those everyday things common and probably familiar to those living during John Payne's lifetime.

We do know, for example, that clothing of the time reflected the extravagance of the period. Every garment was a little more exaggerated, and every fashion still more extraordinary than its counterpart in the preceding generation. England, like Europe in the Fifteenth Century, was famous for splendor and squalor, and was more medieval than modern. [5]

Timothy Foote, in an article in the *Smithsonian*, wants us to picture the nobles and ladies "arrayed in gorgeous, particolored costumes that trailed in the mud, or swept among the rushes on the floor of the great hall where bones and leavings were gnawed by dogs." [2]

Baths were rare by modern standards, and perfume prevalent. You brought your own knife to table, used it to cut off what you would eat, which was deposited on a slab of hardtack bread, known as a "trencher". Basically, you ate with your hands. (Even in the 16th Century people did this. The great essayist Michel de Montaigne noted wryly that in his haste at meals he sometimes bit his fingers.)[2]

"There were new codes of manners (don't scratch youself or pick your teeth at table) and how-to-books (how to give a joust). Melees—mock war between mounted knights—caused so many injuries that the practice would soon be phased out. War never went out of style, but it was changing with the advent of guns and explosives. Meanwhile, one measure of how wide a road had to be was the length of a knight's lance if he rode with it sideways across his saddle." [2]

Women were not the only sex subjected to style changes. Men at this time exaggerated their figures as much as their clothes, and many not only tightened their waists, but wore their tunics stiffened out into a globular shape over the chest, which still more accentuated the waist-line. The breastplate in Fifteenth-Century armour was also molded to the same globular form. The shoes were even more pointed than before, and sometimes so long as to necessitate fastening the points up to the knee with small jewelled chains.

All dress in this century was brilliant in color, costly of material, and generally extreme in form. Middle class ladies dressed very much like the noble ladies, but wore simplified versions of their costume. [5]

This, then, was life at the time of our third generation descendant, John Payne, (Gen. III, No. 5).

REFERENCES FOR THIS CHAPTER

1. Archdeaconry of Canterbury, Vol. 18, fo. 5.

2. Foote, Timothy, "Where Columbus Was Coming From". *Smithsonian*, December 1991, p. 31.

3. Holman, M.L., *American Genealogist*, Vol. 21, p. 183.

4. Jordan, C.F. *Social Institutions of Kent, 1480–1660*, Kent County.

5. Quinnel, Marjorie, *A History of Everyday Things in England 1066–1499*. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons. 1918. pp. 149–150.

6. Rowse, A.L., *The Elizabethan Renaissance*. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons. 1918. pp. 97–98.

CHAPTER V

John Payne (Gen. IV, No. 12) and His Descendants

Bind her, grind her, burn her with fire,
Cast her ashes into the sea—
She shall escape, she shall aspire,
She shall arise in a sacred scorn,
Lighting the lives that are yet unborn,
Spirit supernal, splendid eternal,
England!

—H.G. CONE, *Chant of Love for England*

JOHN PAYNE (Gen. IV, No. 12), b. abt. 1510, Frittenden, Kent County, England; d. between 20 September 1549 and 13 February 1551 at Frittenden, England; m. Jane Couchman abt. 1534, who d. after 1551; she was dau. of Robert Couchman of Frittenden, a Clothier.

Residence: Frittenden, Kent County, England.

Authority: Paine Family Records. (H.D. Paine); American Genealogist, Vol 21, Holman, M.L.

GENERATION V

Children of John (Gen. IV, No. 12) and Jane (Couchman) Payne:

14. Elizabeth (Gen. V, No. 14) b. abt. 1527, living 1549; m. John Mascall.

    Children of Elizabeth and John:

    a. Robert

    b. Richard

15. Robert (Gen. V, No. 15) b. abt. 1535, of Boughton Monchelsea, Kent; will dtd. 1604; m. Dennys_____, who d. after 1604; Children (Payne).

    Children of Robert and Dennys:

    a. Margaret; bap. 26 July 1563, Frittenden; m. Walter Reader.

    b. Peter; bap. 15 August 1568, Tenterden, Kent Co., England; will dtd. 1637; bur. 5 August 1638, "an ancient householder;" m. 1/w 15 September 1589, Alice Burdon, Frittenden, Kent Co.; 2/w 7 July 1597, Marian Fowle of Frittenden who was bur. there 14 July 1637; had in Frittenden, by 1/w, Alice, a dau. bur. 21 June 1590; and a stillborn son, bur. 6 October 1591; by 2/w, Marian, Robert Payne, bap. 25 February 1598/99; bur. 2 March 1598/99; a dau. Margaret Payne, bap. 25 May 1600; m. 5 May 1623, Frittenden, Gervace Morlyne, another dau., Mary Payne, bap. 26 December 1602; m._____ Fullager, a son, John Payne, b. abt. 1604; m. 13 November 1638, Frittenden, Martha Buckhurst, and twins, one stillborn, bur. 19 February 1606/07. (Possibly John was other twin.)

16. NICHOLAS (Gen. V, No. 16), b. abt. 1539, at Frittenden, Kent Co., England; living 1611. Direct-Line Descendant.
17. Margaret, b. abt. 1542, living 1549; m. three times, 1/h John Meriam; 2/h Richard Reader; 3/h William lambard. (Pedigree by William Lambard, 1570 Arch. Cantiana, 39:132).
18. Cicely, b. abt. 1546, living 1549.

John Payne (Gen. IV, No. 12), an English yeoman like his forefathers, was no doubt a typical yeoman, embodying the old English tradition chronicled by poets and writers. In Robert Greene's *Pinner of Wakefield*, George-a-Greene refuses the King's offer of a knight-hood for his service.

> Then let me live and die a yeoman still;
> So was my father, so must live his son.

A yeoman was one who had managed in a few generations—or possibly even in one or two—to gather a good deal of land and to have better houses than those typical of their class.

The holdings of a yeoman varied greatly in size; they varied also in character. In theory and in old law, he was one who had a freehold of 40s. annual income, and there were many freeholders among yeomen. Most yeomen were men who held their lands from a lord of the manor for a rent, but on such old tenures from father to son that they felt they had a kind of "property right" in them. [7]

In John Payne's will, prepared sometime between 1549 and 1551, mention is made of "paying the lordes dutye", and of willing to Jane, "My wyf the pfectes [profits] of my messuage and all my landes during the terme of her naturall life . . ." This would support our contention that John was a part of the yeoman class, and his son Nicholas (Gen. V, No. 16) identified his position in his will as a "yeoman", 10 May 1617.

Thomas Fuller, a seventeenth-century moralist, in *The Holy State (1642)*, depicted the yeoman as "a gentleman in ore, whom the next age may see refined, and is the wax capable of a gentle impression when the prince shall stamp it." [5]

The yeoman was peculiar to England, and in every way more advantaged than his peasant counterpart on the Continent. English throughout, he flouted foreign fashions, ate substantial food, displayed modesty, paid his debts, practiced good husbandry, and "in time of famine he is the Joseph of the country and keeps the poor from starving." [9]

Many accounts of the time describe the ideal of the yeoman. They seem to tell us what Englishmen wished the yeoman to be, rather than what he really was. If he was distinguished by his "Englishness," he was also ridiculed as a bumpkin who had difficulty seeing beyond the nose of his occupation, which was farming pure and simple. John Earle in *Microcosmographie (1628)* marked him as:

> "A country fellow that manures his ground well but lets himself lie fallow and untilled . . . His conversation is among beasts . . . His hand guides the plow and the plow his thoughts, and his ditch and landmark is the very mound of his meditations. He expostulates with his oxen very understandingly and speaks Gee and Ree better than English. His mind is not much distracted with objects, but if a good fat cow come in his way he stands dumb and astonished, and though he haste be never so great will fix here half an hour's contemplation . . . His religion is a part of his copyhold, which he takes from his landlord and refers wholly to his discretion. Yet if he gives him leave, he is a good Christian to his power [that is], comes to church in his best clothes and sits

> there with his neighbors, where he is capable only of two prayers: for rain and fair weather. He apprehends God's blessings only in a good year or a fat pasture, and never praises him but on good ground. He is sensible of no calamity but the burning of a stack of corn or the overflowing of a meadow, and think Noah's flood the greatest plague that ever was, not because it drowned the world but spoiled the grass. For death he is never troubled and if he get in but his harvest before, let it come when it will, he cares not." (9)

The yeoman had work to cover the entire year. His seasonal occupations have been traced by Mildred Campbell. "In the first two months of the year he had his fields plowed and harrowed and the manure spread; he set trees and hedges, pruned the fruit trees, and lopped the timber. March and April were the months to stir the fields again and sow the wheat and rye. In May gardens were planted and hop vines trained to poles and ditches scoured. It was also in that month that lambs were weaned and sheep watched lest they get the 'rot.' Sheep were washed and sheared in June. In July hay was cut, dried, and stacked. Harvest came in August, when extra help would be called in not only from the neighborhood but from townsmen who took holidays at harvesting. Threshing followed harvesting and winter wheat and rye were sown. During the Autumn cider and perry were made in those counties where apples and pear trees abounded, as in Kent County, where our ancestors lived at the time. By November the fall planting was finished and the time had come for the killing of cattle and hanging up their salted carcasses for winter meat." (2)

John Payne's wife, Jane, like other wives of yeomen during this time, was hardly less important than her husband. "To thrive, the yeoman must wive," wrote Thomas Tusser, who in mid-Sixteenth Century made rhymes about farming that became proverbs. The yeoman's wife had to set a good table, "bread, beer, and beef, yeoman's fare . . . no kickshaws (fancy dishes), full dishes, whole bellyfulls." Her husband and the laborers who lived with the family would come home hungry, and there were the children and the female servants to feed. A good wife was always ready with extra fare if a neighbor dropped in.

She also had to watch and work at all the processes connected with milk and fruit, to make cheese and butter and jam and preserves for the use of the family, and to sell. Once or twice a week she would be off to market and sell apples, pears, frumenty (a dish made of wheat boiled in milk and seasoned with cinnamon and sugar), chickens, eggs, bacon and various kinds of garden vegetables.

Her vegetable garden might contain melons, cucumbers, cabbage, radishes and salad herbs. Potatoes, that modern staple, were seldom planted until near the end of the Seventeenth Century. [3]

Fuller tells us that the typical yeoman was portrayed as thriving on solid and substantial food. His usual breakfast was pottage, made of liquor from boiled meat with vegetables and oatmeal, and a bit of meat. He ate his dinner at midday, and that usually consisted of broth and bread, brawn (the flesh of a boar) and some other dish, but generally not more than three. For supper on Sundays and Thursdays he ate roast meat. The

bread was brown, made either of whole wheat or "maslin", a mixture of either wheat and rye or rye and barley. (5)

Quoting Fuller, "Still at our yeoman's table you shall have as many joints as dishes: no meat disguised with strange sauces, no straggling joint of sheep in the midst of a pasture of grass beset with sallets on every side, but solid substantial food; no servitors [more nimble with their hands than the guests with their teeth] take away meat before stomachs are taken away." (5)

Between household duties and the bearing and bringing up of children, the yeoman's wife had probably a harder existence than her husband's. This is evidenced by the epitaph of the wife of one yeoman, which says:

> From my sad cradle to my sable chest,
> Poor pilgrim, I did find a few months rest.

William Harrison observed in his *Description of England* (1577) that the husbandman's diet consisted principally of beef, mutton, veal, lamb, and pork as well as "souse [pickled pork], brawn, bacon, fruit, pies of fruit, fowls of sundry sorts, cheese [for which every inventory will vouch], butter, eggs, etc."

The yeoman's beverage was home-brewed ale made of malt, water, and yeast, which was called by Andrew Boorde "An Englishman's natural drink." Then, too, there was the new drink, beer. Made of malt, hops, and water, it was consumed in increasing quantities by Englishmen. Yet cider was still a favorite in the west country and in Kent and Sussex.

When the yeoman sat down at the table, he gave little thought to fine manners. For one thing, they would have

smacked of Italian or Dutch influence—always obnoxious. Then, too, he generally had a large appetite and little time for superfluities. John Earle in his *Microcosmographie* noted that "his dinner is his other work, for he sweats at it as much as at his labor; he is a terrible fastener on a piece of beef, and you may hope to stave the guard off sooner." Earle appended a note on a typical yeoman's drinking habit: "He is niggard all the week except on market day, where if his corn sells well, he thinks he may be drunk with good conscience."[4] Every honest yeoman slipped now and then. Adam Eyre recorded in his diary at the end of one day that he had spent the afternoon in the alehouse. A pang of remorse prompted him to add: "I had abused myself in drinking. God have mercy on me." [4]

Though we have no way of knowing exactly the type of dwelling our Payne ancestors lived in during their lifetimes in England, we can make some assumptions, thanks to the historical record. The average yeoman was likely to have a story-and-a-half dwelling with a milkhouse, a malthouse, and other small buildings attached to the house at the side, or at the back. Their house was probably fairly simple and pleasing in line. It would contain a main living room, a parlor or second room, where there would be one or more beds, and several other rooms with beds. A yeoman had to crowd in beds and might have from four or five to ten of them in his house. There was sometimes a kitchen, although in small houses, the cooking might have been done over the open fire in the great fireplace of the main room. [7]

About the children of yeomen we have only scant information. The oldest son succeeded his father on the land, unless

he took up another occupation. The Payne family line seems to have followed this pattern. Another son might be apprenticed to a merchant in London or to an artisan or businessman in a country town; then again, he might take a cottage on the farm and work for his father as a laborer, or become a laborer on the "home farm" of the lord of the manor, or enter service in the country house.

The daughters might help in the house or enter service with a neighbor's wife and learn housewifery; such service was not looked down upon. Presently they married. As working women in the house, they had a better chance to find mates of their own approximate status than the daughters of the gentry, and possibly more opportunity to marry from inclination. But they, like others, were brought up to value money and regard the home as needing an economic basis. Their fathers were supposed to provide dowries for each of them, so that a large family of daughters might sometimes prove an embarrassment. The daughters married the sons of neighboring yeomen, schoolmasters, curates, and even beneficed clergymen, and no doubt also tradesmen, apprentices to artisans, and young laborers on their fathers' farms.

Religion offered the yeoman his intellectual outlet and he would debate the old religion (Catholicism) versus the new, and offer opinions. William Honiwell, of Devon, wrote in his diary that at dinner with his neighbors there was little significant talk—except for arguments about scripture.

Such yeomen were often readers. Adam Eyre in mid-century built book-shelves and was always lending books. Yet, in the time of Elizabeth, hundreds of yeomen had put crosses against

their names in documents they signed, not necessarily as proof they they could not read, but an indication at least that writing was not easy for them. To many, reading may have seemed an unnecessary accomplishment. "We can learn to plough and harrow," boasts a typical yeoman in one of Nicholas Breton's epic poems about county life, and in one interesting saga made his yeoman say, "Sow, reap, and prune, thresh and fan, winnow and grind, brew and bake, and all without book." [3] If he needed help, the yeoman added, he asked for it from the parish clerk or the schoolmaster, who served his turn well enough.

The yeoman prided himself on his industry and ridiculed the gentry, in particular, for its idleness. The stereotyped yeoman was not the gentleman farmer, but one who knew his land because he worked it with his servants. Yeoman diaries and account books show that the literary sources were not wrong when they made such claims for their hero. Yet yeomen did have their forms of recreations and pastimes, as Adam Eyre indicated above. The countryman enjoyed running in matches, "Wrestling, play with the sword, rapier, or dagger, and riding, hunting and fishing were close to every countryman's heart."[3]

The same yeoman who prided himself on hard work, frugality, and neighborliness was often one who set sail from England for America during the seventeenth century. Perhaps this described the attitude of our Payne descendants, and particularly Moses Paine (Gen. VI, No. 28), who came to New England in the spring of 1638.

As stated in Chapter III, John (Gen. III. No. 5) left no recorded will. His son, also named John (Gen. IV, No. 12), did leave one, however, as follows:

"In the name of God Amen. I John Payne of the parishe of ffryttended husbandman beyng sycke of bodye but of pfecte memorye . . . doe ordeigne and mae this my Laste will and testamente the xxv (th) daye of Septembre in the yeare of our Lord god M (t) CCCCCXXXXIX in maner and forme following FFYRSTE I bequethe my soule vnto theuerlyving god And my bodye I will to be buryed in the churche yeard of ffryttenden foresayde Itm I will to Jane my wyf the pfectes (profits) of my messuage and all my Landes durying the terme of her naturall Life w (t) oute streape or waste paying the lordes dutye and keeping the repacons thereof convenyently Itm I will that Jane my wif shall paye or cause to be payde to my ij Sonnes Roberte Payne and Nycolas Payne xx s yearly to eu'y to them, to Roberte when he comythe to thage of xxij yeares and to Nycholas when he comythe to the age of xxiij yeares and so from tyme to tyme for defaulte of paymente of the xxs to them and eu'y of them as ys abovesayde bequethed And for Lacke of such distresse y(t) shalbe Lefull for my wif bequethed and the same to their ppr vse to receave and keep for euer Itm I will to my daughters Elyzabethe Margarette and Cecylye and euery of them x (li) to be payde by my wif at the daye of their Maryages And if they nor anye of them do not marye before thage of xx yeares Then I will my wif to paye to my sayde iij daughters to entire into my Landes Called Bal-

dens and to Distreigne and the Distresse so taken to Dryve and carrye awaye and the same to reteyne and kepe vntil due and full payment be to them and euery of them made w (t) all maner of arrerage yf annye be But yf yt fortune my abovenamyd Daughters or anye of them to decease before the daye of maryage or before thage of xx (ti) yeares Then I will the sayde Som of x pds. to them and eu'ry of them Lymyted to Remaigne to thuse of Jane my wyf aforesayed Item I will and bequethe to Jane my wyf all and singler my moveable goods All my debtes and legacies paid and pformed in manner and forme as ys above And I will John Castles to be my ouersear of my Laste will to whom I will my wyf to paye for his paynes iij(s) iil(d) Wytnes John Pette and John Castle."

Proved 13 February 1551, Edward VI by oaths of John Pette and John Castleyn, witnesses, and commission issued to the executrix named in the will. [1]

REFERENCES FOR THIS CHAPTER

1. Archdeaconry of Canterbury, Vol. 26, fo. 8.

2. Campell, Mildred, *The English Yeoman Under Elizabeth and the Early Stewarts*. New Haven: 1942.

3. *The Courtier and the Country Man*, p. 10.

4. Earle, John, *Microcosmographie*, 1628.

5. Fuller, Thomas, *The Holy State*, 1624.

6. Holman, M.L., *American Genealogist*, Vol. 21.

7. Notestein, Wallace, T*he English People on the Eve of Colonization*. Harper & Rowe, New York. 1954. pp. 16, 17, 70–85.

8. Paine, H.B. *Paine Family Records, 1882–83*.

9. Schmidt, A.F. *The Yeoman in Tudor and Stewart England*. Folger Shakespeare Library, Washington, D.C. 1961. p. 2, 3, 24.

CHAPTER VI

Nicholas Payne (Gen. V, No. 16) and His Descendants

O to be in England now that April's there
And whoever wakes in England sees, some morning unaware,
That the lowest boughs and the brushwood
sheaf Round the elm-tree bole are in tiny
leaf, While the chaffinch sings on the
orchard bough in England—now!
And after April, when May follows,
And the whitethroat builds, and all the swallows!
Hark, where my blossom'd pear-tree in
the hedge leans to the field and scatters
on the clover blossoms and dewdrops—at
the bent spray's edge—that's the wise
thrush; he sings each song twice over,
Lest you should think he never could
recapture the first fine careless rapture!
And though the fields look rough with
hoary dew, all will be gay when noontide
wakes anew, the buttercups, the little children's dower—
far brighter than gaudy melon-flower!

—ROBERT BROWNING, "Home Thoughts From Abroad"

NICHOLAS PAYNE (Gen. V, No. 16), b. abt. 1539, Frittenden, Kent County, England; bur. 24 January 1617/17, Frittenden; will dtd. 10 May 1617; 1/m Anne Crofton, abt. 1564; bur. 24 August 1591 at Frittenden, England; 2/m Joyce _____; bur. 18 January 1610; 3/m Mary Bezbeech, 9 July 1611.

Residence: Frittenden, Kent County, England.

Authority: Registers of St. Mary's Church, Frittenden, England; Paine Family Records (H.D. Paine, p. 20–22).

GENERATION VI

Children of Nicholas (Gen. V, No. 16) and Anne (Crofton) Payne.

Though Nicholas was married three times, I have been able to locate only the names of children born to his first wife, Anne Crofton.

19. Katherine, bap. 1 July 1565; d. before 1617.
20. John, bap. 15 May 1569, d. before 1617.
21. Grace, (twin) bap. 9 January 1571/72; bur. 10 January 1571/72.
22. Jane, (twin) bap. 9 January 1571/72; bur. 12 January 1571/72.
23. Thomas, bap. 12 June 1573; bur. 25 March 1575/76.
24. Jane, bap. 26 September 1574; living 1617; m. Thomas Young; had four children:
    a. Nicholas

b. John

c. Anne

d. Jane

25. Thomas, bap. 24 March 1576/77; bur. 25 March 1576/77.

26. William, (twin) bap. 27 June 1578; bur. 22 August 1606; unmarried.

27. Elizabeth, (twin) bap. 22 June 1578; bur. 20 July 1578.

28. MOSES, (twin) bap. 23 April 1581; bur. 21 June 1643, Braintree, Mass. Direct-Line Descendant.

29. Tabitha, (twin) bap. 23 April 1581; d._____; m. Nathan Hubert; had four children:

    a. Henrie

    b. John

    c. Sara

    d. Elizabeth

Authority: Archdeaconry of Canterbury, Bundle for 1617, original will; Paine Family Records (H.D. Paine)

Nicholas Payne (Gen. V, No. 16) was born in Frittenden, Kent County, England about 1539. Since we are following only direct-line descendants, Nicholas will be the last descendant who was born, lived and died in England whom we will follow. Moses Payne (Gen. VI, No. 28), his son, "whole and sole executor" of Nicholas' estate, and our direct-line descendant, will, in the next chapter, be followed to New England in 1638.

Like the four preceding generations, Nicholas belonged to the yeoman class. His will, dated 10 May 1617, attests to this, where he describes himself as a "yeoman", and the inheritance he bequeathed his children was quite substantial for someone living during this period. (Reference may be made to my description of the preceding generation, that of John Payne, Gen. IV, No. 12, since it describes the nature of the yeoman class.)

Nicholas apparently managed the inheritance from his father rather capably, for upon his death, we can see an appreciable increase in finances and in land holdings, as cited in his will. He appeared to be generous as a lender to his sons-in-law, and forgiving of these loans upon his death. He also bequeathed generous sums of money to his grandchildren, as detailed in this rather extensive will.

As stated previously, since we are unable to provide particular descriptions of our Payne ancestors, we can—thanks to chronicles of the Renaissance period—describe the typical quality of life experienced by ancestors such as Nicholas Payne.

During Nicholas' lifetime, Elizabeth I ruled (1558–1603). Edmund Spenser (1552–1599), often called "the poet's poet",

was living and demonstrating his gift for making melodious music out of words, and William Shakespeare (1564–1616), one of our greatest lyric poets, provided what is perhaps the perfect expression of humanism. One of the greatest painters and sculptors of all time, Michelangelo (1475–1564), had already completed the ceiling of the Sistine Chapel in Rome, and artistic genius was celebrated everywhere.

But what qualities best describe our typical forefathers? Wallace Notestein characterizes those living during the lifetime of Nicholas, as follows:

"He was a man earnest in his talk, a very wide, sad [sober], and grave man. He had reason to be so. Under gray skies and cold drizzles his fathers and he and his sons had cleaned their ditches, repaired their boundary walls, and inserted new stones in their houses and barns. By denial and hard work over the generations the family had added field to field. Such families had won a position among their neighbors, but their struggle had not been easy. The chilly houses of the time afforded men and women few comforts. Many a farmer watched one wife after another die in childbirth, or of a consumption, and saw child after child yield up its soul in convulsions or fever."[3]

Records do not indicate the sorrows felt by our Payne ancestors, because they recorded their loses with little comment. Simple notations of births and deaths have been recorded in parish registers, and tell us the brief, cold, factual data. Family members probably received some solace from what the priest or minister promised, but it was a kind of stolid endurance that carried them through. They did not pity themselves. They were not philosophic and they did not rationalize

their experiences; they went on doing the next things as well as they knew how. People of that kind could even face perilous seas and settle on a stern and rockbound coast, as did Nicholas' son, Moses Paine (Gen. VI, No. 28) and his children. The daily lives of the typical citizens had given them a hardness that was not soon bred out of the English stock in Kent and Massachusetts.

From the information available, Nicholas' life seems to have paralleled the one described above, for we find by the time of his death, at the approximate age of seventy-eight:

(1) His first daughter, Katherine, had died at the age of fifty-two.

(2) His son, John, had died at the age of forty-eight.

(3) Twin daughters, Grace and Jane, died at birth.

(4) Thomas, another son, died at birth.

(5) Twins, William and Elizabeth, both died within two months of birth.

(6) He had buried two of his three wives, Anne Croften in 1591, and Joyce ____ in 1610.

His third wife, Mary Bezbeech, was still living when his will was prepared. In Nicholas' will, reference was made to a son of Moses (Gen. VI, No. 28) named John. Moses would have been about forty-six when the will was made. I surmise that John (Gen. VI, No. 30) must have been the son of Moses and Mary (Benison) Paine, his first wife.

The historical record shows clearly, then, that infant mortality was a serious problem. Once married, the heir to a country family recognized his first duty. It was necessary

that he should have many children, because the loss of children in childbirth and in infant years was common. If he were fortunate, he might rear three children from ten births. Having twins was exceedingly difficult, and few survived. Example: Of three sets of twins born to Nicholas and Anne, only one set survived. This would have been Moses (Gen. VI, No. 28), our direct-line descendant, and his sister, Tabitha. Nothing was more desired by a country family than a male heir, and Nicholas must have been quite pleased when the twins survived, for this meant the male line was continued. For Tabitha, it would mean that if she should marry a male heir, she would devote the years from twenty to forty to bearing children. In the *Scornful Lady*, Loveless says to the lady: "What can you do in a household to provide for issue but lie in bed and get 'em?"

The diseases of the time in England were described so vaguely that it is irresponsible to make generalizations about their incidence. I shall have to confine myself to impressions from general reading, knowing how little these impressions can be supported by statistics, which are, and will always be, unavailable. [7]

The first impression is of the dangers associated with childbirth. Physicians were called in only by the well-to-do, and only in serious cases. Probably more than nine-tenths of all deliveries were made by mid-wives and neighbor women. The heavy mortality of women in the bearing of children can be seen clearly in parish registers, and more graphically in the little statues in parish churches of a gentleman surrounded by four kneeling wives, three of whom

perhaps died in that way, often in their early twenties. Anne (Croften) Payne was typical, for she died at the age of twenty-seven.

In families on every level in the early seventeenth century, the birth rate was high, but the death rate was also very high. The average Englishman could look forward to a life span of only thirty to thirty-five years. Death was such a frequent occurrence that everyone grew used to the experience, accepted its inevitability, and never thought of avoiding its presence. People silently agreed with Robert Hegge that one must "digest these common crosses of mortalitie . . . [for] in this world we are but Tenants at will and no man has a lease of his life for a tearme of yeares." The heaviest incidence of death fell upon newborn infants and tiny children; infant mortality appears to have mounted from 1600 to 1640. Ordinarily, if a child lived to the age of four, he had a reasonable chance of attaining maturity, unless he later fell victim to one of the diseases that ravaged the land.[2]

We know that the men and women of the Payne family of the twelfth, the fourteenth and sixteenth centuries were really very much like ourselves, that the differences which strike us as so very important were merely superficial differences, and that underneath the mailed shirts and velvet coats of John, Nicholas and Stephen, each was motivated by the same ambition that keeps us going—the passionate "will" to survive.

I shall conclude this discussion of Nicholas Payne's generation by including a copy of his will. His eldest male heir, Moses Paine, (Gen. VI, No. 28) was the Executor.

The Will of Nicholas Payne of Frittenden, Kent

"In the name of god amen. The Tenth Daie of Maye 1617 I Nicholas Payne of Frittenden in the Countye of Kent yeoman, being ficke of body but of good and pfect memory (prayfed be god) doe make and declare this my laft will and teftament in manner and forme following ffirft and principally I give com'end and bequeth my foule to god that made yt, and my bodye to be buried by the difcrecon' of my executor. Itm' I give and bequeth vnto Mary my wiffe during her naturall liffe the forme of ffortie fhillings a yere of good and lawfull mony of England yerely to be payed vnto her or her affignes by myne Executor. And alfoe I giue and bequeath vnto my faid wiffe five pounds of good and lawfull money of England to be payed vnto her by my executor within two months after my deceafe. Itm' I give and bequeath vnto Jane my Daughter the nowe wiffe of Thomas Younge ffortie fhillings to be payde vnto her within two monthes next after my deceafe. And alfoe I give vnto her my faid Daughter all fuche monye as Thomas younge her faid hufband oweth vnto me. Itm' I give and bequeath vnto Nicholas younge the fonne of the faid Thomas younge twenty pounds of good and lawful mony of England to be payed vnto him at his age of one and twentie yeres by my Executor. Itm' I give and bequeath vnto John younge one other of the fonnes of the faid Thomas

younge the some of twentie pounds of good and lawful mony of England to be paied vnto him at his age of one and twentie yeres by my Executor. Itm' I give and bequeath vnto Anne younge and Jane younge Daughters of the faid Thomas younge Tenne pounds a peece of good and lawfull mony of England to be paied vnto them or either of them by my Executor at thier or either of their feu'all ages of one and twentie yeres. Itm' I give and bequeath vnto Tabitha Hubert my Daughter the nowe wiffe of Nathan Hubert the fome of Ten pounds of good and lawfull mony of England to be payed vnto her within sixe monethes next after my deceffe by my Executor. And alfoe I give and bequeath vnto the faid Tabitha my Daughter all fuch mony as the faid Nathan Hubert her faid hufbond oweth vnto me. And further alfoe I will and bequeath vnto the faid Tabitha Hubert my faid Daughter duringe her bnaturall liffe the fome of ffortie fhillings of good and lawfull money of England every yere yerely to be payde by my Executor vnto the faid Tabitha or her affignes at two feafts in the yere moft vfuall That is to faye at the feafts of St. Michaell Tharchangell and Thannunciacon of the bleffed lady St. Mary the Virgin by even and equall porcons (the faid Tabitha or her affignes lawfully demaunding the faid feu'all fomes on the faid feu'all featfs at the nowe dwelling howfe of me the faid Nicholas). The firft payment whereof to begin at the firft feaft of

the foresaidfeafts which fhall firft happen next after the defeafe of me the faid Nicholas. Provided alwayes and if it fhall happen that the faid feu'all fomes of mony or any pte therof behinde and vnpaied by my executor, at the faid feu'all feaftes or dayes of payment or either of them during the naturall liffe of the faid Tabitha (or the faid Tibitha or her affignes lawfully demaunding the fame as aforefaid). That then my mynde and will is, that my faid Executor, his executors or affigns fhall forfeite and paye vnto the said Tabitha or her affignes, for every fuch feu'all defaulte, the fome of twentie fhillings of good and lawfull mony of England within one moneth next after every fuche defaulte feu'ally made as aforefaid Itm' I give and bequeath vnto Henrie Hubert and John Hubert fonnes of the faid Nathan Hubert the fome of twnetie pounds a peece of good and lawfull mony of England to be payde vnto them feu'ally at their feu'all ages of one and twenty yeres by my Executor. Itm' I give and bequeath vnto Sara Hubert and Elizabeth Hubert Daughters of the faid Nathan Hubert the fome of tenne pounds a peece of good and lawfull mony of Engländ to be payde vnto them feu'ally at their feu'all ages of one and twenty yeres by by Executor. Provided allwayes, And my mynde and will is That if any of the faid Children of the faid Nathan Hubert before menconed fhall happen to dpte this liffe before his, her or either of their feu'all ages of one and twenty

yere, that then my mynde and will is that his her or either of their legacyes foe depted, and given as aforefaid fhalbe equally devided amd payde by my executor to the furviving children of the faid Nathan Hubert when they fhall feu'ally come vnto their or either of their feu'all ages of one and twentie yeres. Itm' I give and bequeath vnto John Payne fonne of Mofes Payne my fonne the fome of ffirtie pounds of good and lawfull mony of England to be payed vnto him the faid John, by my Executor at his age of one and twenty yeres. And all the refidue of my goods and chattells whatfoever (my debts, legacyces and funerall expences difcharged). I give and bequeath vnto Mofes Payne my fonne whome I make and ordayne my whole and fole executor of this my laft will and teftament.

This is the laft will and teftement of me the faid Nicholas Payne made and declared the daye and yere first above written, touching and concerning all my meffuages lands and tenements and hereditaments whatfoever vnto my faid fonne Moses and to his heires for ever.

"In Witness Whereof I the faid Nicholas Payne have vnto this my laft Will and Teftament fett my hand and feale the daye and yere firft above Written. And in the fifteenth yere of the Raiene of our sou'aigne lord kinge James that nowe is of England and of Scotland the ffifteth.

Sealed and deliu'ed the m'ke of the faid
in the pfence of Nicholas [Seal] Payne
Richard Wood (The seal bears the
Willyam Water Impress of a ring,
p me Serlen Stede Ser no devise visible)

21 January 1617 [18] the above written will was probated by the executor named and the inventory filed. CCxxiij (1) c-o"

[Probate Act from the Latin]

(Archdeaconry of Canterbury, Bundle for 1617, original will.) Written as originally transcribed.

REFERENCES FOR THIS CHAPTER

1. Archdeaconry of Canterbury, Bundle for 1617, Original Will.

2. Bridenbaugh, Carl, *Vexed and Troubled Englishmen 1590–1642.* New York: Oxford University Press. 1968. pp. 25–26.

3. Notestein, Wallace, *The English People on the Eve of Colonization.* New York: Harper & Row. 1954. p. 97.

4. Paine, H.D., *Paine Family Records, 1882–83*, pp. 20–22.

CHAPTER VII

Our Immigrant Ancestors and the Journey to New England

A voyage at sea is like the voyage of life.
How little we know at the beginning
what we may see before the end!

—MRS. HENRY FIELD

As was the case with all early immigrants, Moses Paine (Gen. VI, No. 28) and his three children endured a common experience: a long, dangerous, and extremely unpleasant voyage across the Atlantic. In 1902, Henry F. Thompson read a paper before the Maryland Historical Society in Baltimore. Entitled *An Atlantic Voyage in the Seventeenth Century*, it provides an absorbing account of exactly what such a journey entailed. I have included it here, since further research proved it to be a rather typical description of the ships and the ordeal the pasengers faced as they made their crossing to the New World. The *Castle*, which carried Moses Paine and his family to New England in 1638, was quite typical of the Seventeenth-Century ships described in Mr. Thompson's paper. [1]

The vessels Mr. Thompson describes as rather common at the time were very small, when compared to seagoing vessels of the present day. "There were few over two hundred tons, as an inspection of the few extant returns of the naval officers of the Patuxent and Potomac Rivers will show. Although a few ships tipped the scales at from three hundred to five hundred tons, the greater number of them weighed from one hundred and fifty to two hundred and fifty, and more were under than over two hundred." [3]

Mr. Thompson describes them as being, " . . . Broad in the bow, the forecastle and the poop were raised high above the main deck, the mainmast as near the bow as possible and the mizzen where the builders thought fit. The books on navigation and shipbuilding, all speak of top gallant masts and sails but in no one of the log-books is there any mention of a sail above the topsail, although they speak of making and taking in the sails as well as sending down topmasts and yards.

"These ships were very slow sailers, although instances occur of as many as eight miles an hour being made. Such amazing speeds required a fair wind and plenty of it, along with a smooth sea, but at no time was that rate kept up for twenty-four hours. When the wind was ahead, of course, progress was very slow. Ships could not sail 'close to the wind', and often four or five miles was all that could be gained during a whole day. Indeed, on some occasions, these hardy voyagers wound up farther from their destination at the end of twenty-four hours of sailing than they had been at the beginning! Rather than keep on against a head wind, they were forced to 'heave to', or 'try', as they said in those days.

"When a passenger started from London, he could not predict within many weeks how long he might be aboard ship, for the eleven voyages of which we have records lasted anywhere from forty-seven to one hundred and thirty-eight days from London—and from thirty-two to one hundred and thirteen days on the return trip.

"A ship would often be three or four weeks from London before she took her departure, after being detained in the Downs or some port by head winds or storms, and it must have been an inspiring sight, after a storm, to see numerous vessels getting under way; for there would be hundreds of vessels starting out for all parts of the world, all under sail.

"When the fleet was clear of the land, they steered for the Azores, and one or more ships generally sighted Flores and Corves, the most westerly of the islands. Then they made for Cape Henry, and deviated as little as possible from a straight course, for their latitude they could find every day at noon, by means of their quadrants, but their longitude they could only estimate, by calculating the distance run and the course steered, while making allowances for currents, leeway or a heavy sea knocking them off their course.

"While it may be supposed that the duration of the voyage would cause some trouble in providing sufficient food and water for so many persons, we must remember the food was composed principally of bread or ship-biscuit, salt meat, peas and cheese—all of which would keep well for many months. Therefore, it was only the space required for enough food and water that caused any real problems. The fact that it would be necessary to carry food and water for one hundred persons

(including passengers and crew) for a voyage lasting perhaps five months meant that the necessary provisions would occupy a great deal of space.

"In a contract made with the owners of the ship *Nassau*, of five hundred tons, to carry one hundred and fifty or more passengers, the following stipulations were made in regard to food. The passengers were to have the same allowance of food as the sailors, that is to say: "They were to have their allowance of bread, butter and cheese weekly, and the rest of the provisions were to be distributed daily; each passenger, over six years of age, was to have seven pounds of bread every week, each mess of eight to have two pieces of pork (each piece to be two pounds) with pease [sic] five days in the week, and on the other two days four pounds of beef with pease [sic] each day, or four pounds of beef with pudding, with pease [sic] for the two days, and in case the kettle could not be boiled each passenger was to have one pound of cheese every day. Children under six years of age to have such allowance in flour, oatmeal, fruit, sugar and butter as the overseers of the supplies shall judge fit.

"There were in this ship one hundred and ninety-one passengers, of whom twenty-five were under twelve years of age, and although there were some from of all ranks in life, there seems to have been no difference between them as to diet and lodging.

"The ordinary price of a passage on this ship—and this seemed fairly typical—was six pounds, but this large party was charged five pounds each for those over twelve years of age, and half-price for children under that age."[3]

These shipping details fascinate and intrigue us, of course. But they cannot capture the awesome spectacle, the sublime, heart-stopping sense of destiny that must have overwhelmed these early voyagers, as they set forth on the mighty "Ocean Sea" to find a new world for themselves. Burning with grief as they watched their beloved homeland slowly recede, they must have turned their faces with iron determination toward the vast wilderness of waters that lay before them.

What faith it must have taken, as these progenitors of the "American Payne" family watched the first storm-clouds gather above the tossing horizon, to stand tall upon the decks of ships like the Castle, and to clench one's jaw, and to pray silently for the courage, the endurance to face the titanic struggle that lay ahead.

They came first.

Their ancient story—its pain, its terror, its joyful triumph—made our later story possible. And by telling their saga, we both honor them and celebrate ourselves. We honor that long-ago day in the spring of 1638, when Moses Paine and his children first saw the harbor of Boston looming off the bow . . . .

England lay 3,000 miles behind them.

Their new world—*our* new world—had at last begun.

REFERENCES FOR THIS CHAPTER

1. *Lechford Note Book*, 77.

2. *New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol. 65*, p. 290.

3. Thompson, Henry. *An Atlantic Voyage in the Seventeenth Century*. Paper read before the Maryland Historical Society of Baltimore, 1902.

CHAPTER VIII

Moses Paine (Gen. VI, No. 28) and His Descendants

And those that came were resolved to be Englishmen,
Gone to the world's end, but English every one.
And they ate the white corn-kernels, parched in the sun.
And they knew it not, but they'd not be English again.
They would try, they would swear they were,
they would drink the toast,
They would loyally petition and humbly pray,
And over them was another sort of day,
And in their veins was another, a different ghost.
For the country is where the life is, not elsewhere.
The country is where the heart and blood are given.

—AUTHOR UNKNOWN

MOSES PAINE (Gen. VI, No. 28), bap. 23 April 1581; Tenterden, Kent County, England; bur. 21 June 1643, Braintree, Massachusetts; will dated 17 June 1643; 1/m Mary Benison, 2 November 1615, d/o John Benison; she d. 6 March 1617/18; Tenterden, Kent County, England; this marriage appears in the Marriage Licenses of Canterbury as: "Moses

Paine of Frittenden and Mar Benison of Tenterden, virgin." A few years after his marriage to Mary Benison, Moses Paine appears in Tenterden, where the registers give the records of his children and his 2/m to Elizabeth (Sheafe) Collier, bap. 26 October 1589, Cranbrook, Kent County, England; bur. 11 October 1632, Tenterden, Kent County, England; d/o Richard and Margery (Roberts) Sheafe. Moses' 3/m to Judith (Pares) Qunicy, d/o of Edmund Quincy; she d. 29 March 1654, Boston, Massachusetts; no children.

Residence: Frittenden and Tenterden, Kent, England, and Braintree, Massachusetts.

Authority: Registers of St. Mary's Church, Frittenden, England; Registers of St. Mildred's Church, Tenterden, England; Paine Family Records. (11)

Services: "Moses Paine, 1643, contributed largely toward expenses of earlier Indian Wars." (14)
Admission to freemanship 2 June 1641.

GENERATIONS VII

Children of Moses (Gen. VI, No. 28), and 2/w Elizabeth (Sheafe-Colier) Paine.

32. Elizabeth, bap. 23 July 1620, Tenterden, Kent, England; d. 21 February 1676, prob. at Medfield, Massachusetts; m. 17 November 1643, at Braintree, Massachusetts, to Henry Adams, b. abt. 1604, in England, d. 27 February 1676, probably at Medfield, Massachusetts. (11)

The 15th-Century parish church of St. Mildred's in Tenterden, Kent, is dedicated to the second Abbess of Minster Abbey, and has a 100-foot tower.

Modern day view of Tenterden

From the records, we find the marriage of Henry Adams and Elizabeth Paine as the first recorded in the town of Braintree. [12]

John Adams, the second president of the United States, was born in Braintree (Quincy), Mass., and Samuel Adams, the "Father of the American Revolution," had in Henry Adams of Braintree the same forefather. They were cousins in the fourth generation from that first emigrant, Henry, who married Elizabeth Paine of Braintree.

Both Henry and Elizabeth (Gen. VII, No. 32) met with tragic deaths. In the second year of King Philip's War, as is narrated at length in several histories of that eventful period, Adams himself, a lieutenant of the town, was killed at his own door by a shot from hostile Indians, 21 February 1676.

The following account of the fatal shot that also took the life of Elizabeth, was recorded in Gookin's, *Praying Indians*.

"The same night, the lieutenant's widow, being at Mr. Wilson's, the minister's house, being upon a bed in the chamber, divers soldiers and commanders being in the room underneath, Captain Jacob, having a gun in hand, half bent, with the muzzle upwards, by being taking his leave to go to his quarters, by some accident the gun fired and shot through floor, mat, and through the bed of the Lieutenant's widow and slew her also. Though mortally wounded, she survived a week after the injury." [11] Certainly a most unusual and tragic end.

Children of Henry and Elizabeth (Paine) Adams:

a. Eleazor, b. 5 August 1644, at Braintree, Mass.

b. Jasper, b. 23 June 1647, at Braintree, Mass.

c. Elizabeth, b. 11 November 1649, at Braintree, Mass.

d. John, b. 14 July 1652, at Medfield, Mass., d. young. (twin)

e. Henry, b. 14 July 1652, at Medfield, Mass., d. young. (twin)

f. Moses, b. 25 October 1654, at Medfield, Mass.

g. Henry, b. 19 November 1657; m. Lydia Whiting, 1684.

h. Samuel, b. 10 December 1661; d. young.

For further records of the descendants of Henry and Elizabeth (Paine) Adams, see *Adams Family*, by A.N. Adams.

33. Moses Paine (Gen. VII, No. 33), bap. 16 November 1623, at Tenterden, Kent County, England; d. 5 December 1690, at Boston, Mass.; m. Elizabeth Colburn at Braintree, Mass. in 1645. Elizabeth d. 1704, prob. at Boston; she was dau. of Elder William and Mary Colburn. Residence: Braintree and Boston, Mass. Services: "Lieutenant, Ancient and Honorable Artillery Co." of Boston, Mass. 1677. [13]

Children of Moses (Gen. VII, No. 33) and Elizabeth (Colborn) Paine:

a. Moses, b. 16 July 1646; d. 2 February 1647/48.

b. Elizabeth, b. 5 August 1648 at Braintree, Mass., m. _____ Cleare, son of William Cleare.

c. Sarah, b. 30 November 1650; d. 10 July 1651 at Braintree.

d. Moses, b. 24 June 1652; d. before 1690.

e. Mary, b. 12 January 1655; m._____ Small.

f. William, b. 1 April 1657; m.Sara _____; she d. 14 January 1711.

g. John, b. 8 December 1659, d. 1660 at Braintree, Mass.

h. Sarah, b. 1662, at Braintree, Mass.

i. Margaret, b. 1664, at Braintree Mass.

j. Rebecca, b. 23 June 1667, at Braintree, Mass; m. Thomas Walker.

k. Hannah, b. 20 April 1671, at Boston.

l. Lydia, b. 23 August, 1674, at Boston.

In a deed dated 20 September 1681:

"Moses Paine Junior of Boston, Housewright, conveyed to his father, Moses Pain [sic] Senior of Boston, Yeoman, and Thomas Walker of Boston, brickburner, all my share or first division of land which was left unto Elizabeth Paine (wife of Moses Paine Sen'r and daughter of Elder William Coleborn, late of sd. Boston, deed), and unto her children by the last will and testament of the sd. William Colborn." [14]

The land described was on the northerly side of a pasture in the southern end of Boston. [9]

34. STEPHEN (Gen. VII, No. 34), bap. 7 May 1626, at Tenterden, England; d. 29 July 1691, at Braintree, Mass. Direct-line descendant.

35. Margaret, d. young.

The New World must have seemed vast enough for all those who searched for a new way of life on its untamed shores. But the first colonizers of New England found it to be especially harsh and forbidding.

Separatist Pilgrims tackled the wooded coast of New England in 1620. William Bradford, later Governor of Plymouth Colony for thirty-one years, movingly expressed the feeling of the Mayflower voyagers:

> ". . . being thus passed the vast ocean, and a sea of troubles before in their preparation . . . they had now no friends to welcome them nor inns to entertain or refresh their weather-beaten bodies; no houses or much less towns to repair to, to see for succor . . . " (16)

Perhaps the challenge of a hostile environment motivated the early Pilgrims and Puritans to dig and build a new society, for in 1630, John Winthrop led his flock of nearly a thousand Puritans from England to Salem. Searching for a site that had more fresh water, they pressed south and eventually settled on the Shawmut Peninsula, named "Boston"— "Fountain of living waters."

Like all men of his type, Winthrop had a vision, and he labored every day of his life to see it fulfilled. While the company was still aboard ship, before he even knew of Shawmut, he had a strange premonition and preached a lay sermon: "We shall be as a City uppon a Hill," he said. "The eyes of all people are upon us, so that if we deal falsely with our God in this work we have undertaken, and so cause him to withdraw his present

help from us, we shall be made a story and a by-word through the world." [3]

Winthrop's group was invited to settle on Shawmut by its sole white inhabitant, the Reverand William Blackstone. He was an Anglican minister who, seeking solitude, had built a house on the western side of the Tramount. "A good spring flowed nearby," he said; and because the Shawmut Peninsula had few trees, it was free from those three great annoyances of the wilderness forest, "Woolves, Rattle-snakes, and Musketos."

The Reverend Blackstone soon grew to regret his generosity; so many people poured in that, despite the fact that his house was well away from the settlement, he felt cramped and besieged. And so he picked himself up and rode away on a white bull, and sold Boston to John Winthrop for 30 pds., more than the island of Manhattan had cost the Dutch, but a bargain just the same. [4]

In 1638, just eight years later, a courageous decision was made by Moses Paine (Gen. VI, No. 28). He would take his three children, Elizabeth (Gen. VII, No. 32); Moses (Gen. VII, No. 33); and Stephen (Gen. VII, No. 34), and make the voyage to the New World.

We can only speculate on the reason or reasons for this adventurous move. Perhaps the decision had been made several years before by Moses and his second wife, Elizabeth. But when she died, 11 October 1632, Moses waited until the children were older and better able to make the journey.

Moses (Gen. VI, No. 28) was fifty-seven, Elizabeth (Gen. VII, No. 32) was eighteen, Moses (Gen. VII, No. 33) was fifteen, and

Stephen (Gen. VII, No. 34), our direct-line descendant, was twelve when they boarded the *Castle* for the journey to New England.

There they would face a new world that was struggling with hardship and death. As William Bradford wrote in his *History of Plymouth Plantation*:

> ". . . and for the season it was winter, and they know the winters of that country, know them to be sharp and violent, and subject to cruel and fierce storms, dangerous to travel to known places, much more to search an unknown coast. Besides, what could they see but a hideous and desolate wilderness, full of wild beasts and wild men—and what multitude there might be of them they knew not." (16)

How frightening it must have been for Moses and his three children to leave their native England for a future in a strange new world laden with experiences that would certainly try their resolve, and change their lives forever. We have no way of knowing how they felt about this grand move, or imagining their impression, probably some two months later, of the harbor and shoreline of Boston as it must have appeared to them in the spring of 1638.

Boston at that time was a narrow peninsula, the head of which more than anything else resembled the head of a club with three protruding knobs. It was surrounded on all sides by water or marshland, except at the neck, and even here—at neap tide and during severe storms—the water frequently overflowed and made the town site an island.

As the *Castle* approached the harbor, the Paine family would have seen three low peaks in the center of the peninsula. The harbor and water-front facilities of the location were quite good and the waters deep and pleasantly picturesque, with low green islands.

In *Boston and the Legend*, Beebe aptly describes the early skyline: "The houses of the citizens were seldom more than two stories tall, constructed, then and for many years afterward, almost entirely of wood despite disastrous fires, and characterized by the familiar vanes, dormers, and cornices of Elizabethan taste.

"It was a rambling, sprawling town, traces of whose lack of planning are visible to this day (1935) whose only unity derived from the intensity of religious observance and the common cause against the assaults of nature, the devil, and at a somewhat more mature date, the representatives of the British crown." (3)

The Paine family was among the four thousand Englishmen who had emigrated to the Boston vicinty and who inhabited the twenty-odd villages that dotted the bays and islands of its harbor in 1638–40.

By 1638, Governor Winthrop had ceased to record the separate arrivals of passenger ships and lumped them all together. About September first, he made the following record:

"There came over this summer twenty ships, and at least three thousand persons, so as they were forced to look out new plantations. One was begun at Merrimack, and another four or five miles above Concord, and another at Winicowett." (8)

Of these twenty ships not half are known by name, but the *Castle* has been identified as arriving in 1638. The record indicates, "Castle of London, sailed April for New England." [7]

Within two years after their arrival in New England, the Paine family moved in about 1640 to what was called Mount Wollaston. " . . . the General Court, that of May 1640, the petition of the inhabitants of Mount Wollaston was acceded to, and it was granted them to be a town, to be called Braintree." [2]

Braintree was a typical frontier New England town in 1638, and two years later, 13 May 1640, it was incorporated. Fortunately, the records of the town meetings tell us much of the daily lives of our Payne descendants and of the other residents of Braintree. With the publication of the original papers, we are able to see the residents engaged in their everyday toil and struggle. Records of births, marriages and deaths—along with intentions of marriages—were for the most part preserved in Braintree.

One of the earliest entries from the Braintree records included the following:

"Braintree originally was a part of Boston and before they were a town and had offisers of ther own it was called Mount Wilistone and they had a serjant or Levtenant sent from Boston to train them; since they were a town they had offisers of ther own and they are as followeth as y Remember.

"a levtenant colonell, one namely Edmond Quinsey.

"a major, one namely Edmond Quinsey [sic].

"Capts. were 1 Capten Jams Kene. 2 Capten William Ting. 3 Capten Richard Brackett . . .

"Levtenants were Georg Wright, Richard Brackett, William Alis, Robert Twelves . . . Samuel Thompson, Alexander Marsh. "Ensighns were . . . Thomas Matson, Moses Paine, . . . Christopher Webb, William Veasey, Samuel Penniman.

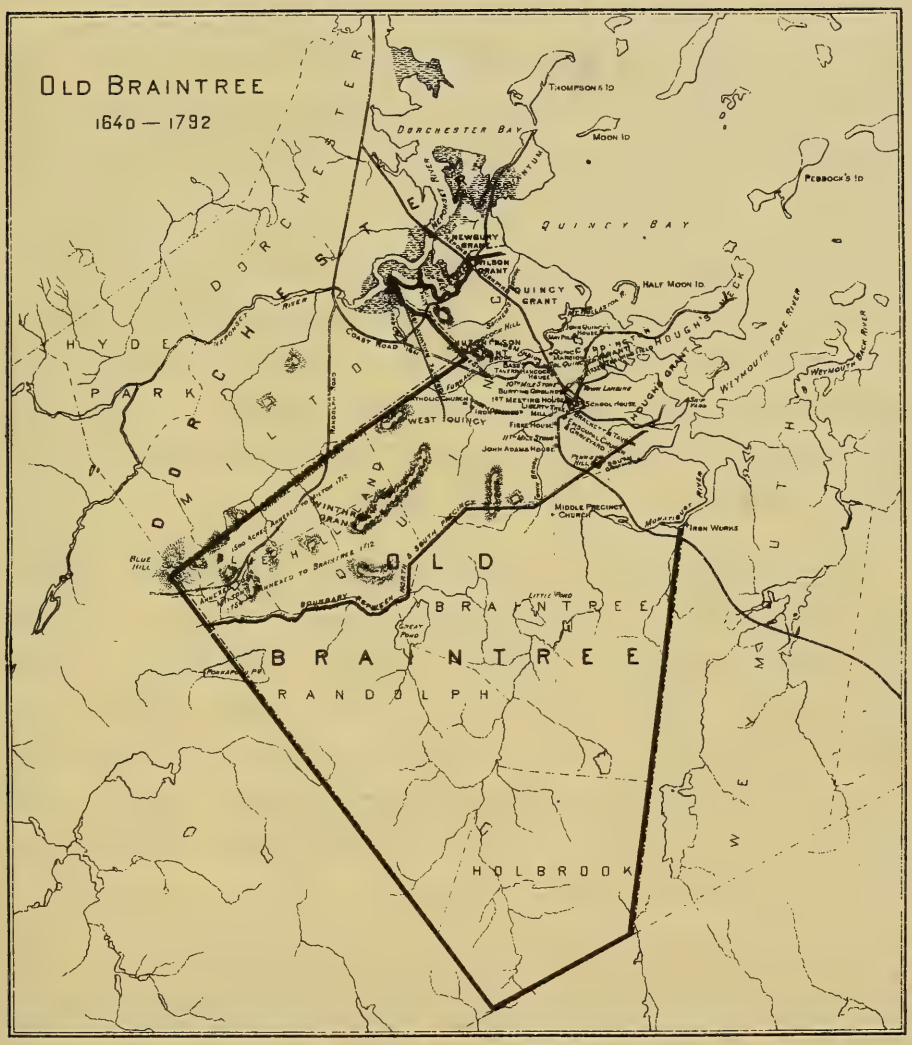
"Serjants were Georg wright [sic], Henery Adams, Thomas Adams, Henery Neale, John Sanders . . ." (12)

The art of self-government was learned here. President John Adams truthfully said, "The secret of New England's greatness was in her meeting house, town meeting, training green and school-house."

In no New England town was the energy, the enterprise and the formative power of the families more pronounced than in Braintree. Names such as Adams, Arnold, Bass, Brackett, Baxter, Faxon, French, Hayward, Hobart, Holbrook, Hunt, Neale, Niles, Paine, Penniman, Quincy, Spear, Thayer, Veazie, Wales, Webb, White, and Wild all exemplified this enterprise and power.

During the long period from 1640 to 1830, Braintree, as was typical of other Massachusetts towns of that time, was in the primitive period—that of formation. Wealth and population increased slowly. Dwelling in houses built on an identical plan, the residents preserved the old domestic and social customs. The outer world made itself little felt in the remote village community.

The principally traveled route, which was to become the colonial coast-road connecting Boston with Plymouth, crossed a brook, then and subsequently known as the Town River. At the time the first meeting-house was built, and also when the



Old Braintree 1640–1792

Moses Paine family became residents of Braintree, the road could have been hardly more than a well-beaten trail, for it was not formally laid out until at least seven years later, in 1648.

"The meeting-house stood in the open, and when the 'country highway' from Weymouth to Dorchester was formally laid out in 1648, it here diverged, passing the building at both its ends, for it faced east and west. The diverging ways then shortly turned and joined again. At no great distance from the front of the meeting-house, looking westward, lay the tangled bottom through which the Town River sluggishly crept. Beyond this, and half a mile or so away, rose the rough, heavily-wooded granite hills, while to the east there stretched a broad and comparatively level, upland plain. Such in 1640 was the centre of town." [2]

The earliest village school in Braintree, which must have been the simplest of structures, stood at the side of the Plymouth highway, or main thoroughfare of the town, and not far from the meeting-house. It is not known when it was constructed, but in 1679 it was referred to as a "landmark". In earlier days, such teaching as the children received would have been done in the home, or in the houses where some temporary teachers lodged. [8]

An established school was not approved formally until 3 March 1678/79. We have no way of knowing how much schooling Stephen (Gen. VII, No. 34) received. He was twelve years old when he came to New England with his father, brother and sister in 1638, so probably little formal education was available, but we can assume from Moses' will, that he was given the responsibility of making certain that Stephen

was "to be brough vp at schoale for three months, & 6 months for the bettering of his reading and writing . . . "

In the Braintree town records of 3 March 1678/79, the Town agreed with Benjamin Thompson that he should be school-master, receiving for his services the rent of "the Towne land," estimated at fifteen pounds a year, and a further sum, to be paid out of the town rate, sufficient to secure him an annual salary of thirty pounds, or a third part of the Rev. Mr. Fiske's contract stipend, which was payable to the latter at that time "in countrey pay at countrey prise." (11)

Unlike the clergyman, the school-master in this case did not look for sustenance merely to his salary; but having graduated from Harvard sixteen years before, he had since been endeavoring to support himself as a physician, and sought teaching to supplement an insufficient professional income. Yet, even this school was not free, for part of the agreement with Thompson was "that every child should carry into the school master halfe a cord of wood beside the quarter money every year;" and twenty years later, in 1700, the nature of the contract was more specifically defined by a vote providing that "every schollar shall pay for his entry into the school one shilling and so successively for every quarter for the whole year if he shall goe more than one quarter, and this shall be a part of the school sallary to be paid unto the schoolmaster, and he to give an account of all that came to the Selectmen." (11)

Moses (Gen. VI, No. 28) became married for a third time, about 1642, to Judith Pares Qunicy, widow of Edmund Quincy, at Braintree, Mass. Her maiden name was Pares, and she came to New England as the wife of Edmund in 1633. Two years

later, Edmund died. She was left with their two children, both born in England.

Apparently, Moses' marriage to Judith took place sometime after he achieved the "freeman" status in 1641.

At first, none but church members could be freemen in Massachusetts, and none but freemen could vote. Because town offices were a burden to people busy subduing the wilderness, many church members refused to record themselves as freemen. As a result, a law was passed in 1647 that compelled such men to serve, or face the penalty of a twenty-shilling fine. Admission to becoming a freeman was dependent (1) upon reaching the age of twenty-one years; (2) church membership; (3) formal proposition to the general court; (4) acceptance by that body or some delegated authority; (5) the taking of a freeman's oath.

Town meetings were open to all, but only freemen could vote for officers. Attendance was compulsory, and anyone an hour late, or absent, was fined twelve pence, unless excused at the next meeting; nor could anyone depart before the meeting was over, under penalty of a sixpence fine.

From the will of Moses' father, Nicholas (Gen. V, No. 16), you will note that with the exception of some legacies to his wife, daughters, and grandchildren, he left all of his property to Moses (Gen. VI, No. 28), who was probably at that time his only living son.

The elder Moses must have invested wisely upon his arrival in Massachusetts, for he owned estates in Concord, Cambridge, Piscataqua, and Braintree.

In 1643, Moses (Gen. VI, No. 28) died, leaving half of his estate to his son, Moses (Gen. VII, No. 33), a quarter to his daughter, Elizabeth (Gen. VII, No. 32), and a quarter to Stephen (Gen. VII, No. 34), his second son and our direct-line descendant. His wife, Judith, was apparently cut off with but twenty shillings. No reason was given for this marked discrimination against her. Perhaps she already had a sizeable estate as the result of the marriage to and subsequent death of her first husband, Edmund Quincy in 1635. At any rate, this is an interesting sidelight, and no doubt would make a charming story in itself.

The inventory of the estate of Moses Paine was executed on the "30th of the 8th mo., 1643". The value of the estate amounted to 671.3.3; the debts to be paid out totaled 73.5.6.

The full text of the will follows, and is quoted as written:

The Will of Moses Paine of Braintree, Mass.

"I moses [sic] Paine of Braintree in New England gent. Son moses Executor. To Steven Paine my second sonne one quarter of my goods & lands in Braintree, Cambridge, Concord & Pascataway in New England, also a quarter of my goods or debts in Ould England if they may be recovered. To Elizabeth Paine my daughter one quarter of my goods in the foremer household stuffe, that one chest of fine linnen be giuen to son Moses, & two

paire to son Steven, Strong and good. Sonne Steven to be vnder sonne Moses' suition till at the age of 20 and 3 yeeres. To sonne Steven twenty pounds sterling. To be brough vp at schoale for three months, & 6 months for the bettering of his reading and writing, to be paid for by son Moses. Lastly the moity & one halfe of my estate, goods, house, lands, cattle, debts, moveables, Chatteles be giuen to my oldest sonne, Moses Paine, & he to be sole executor. Further, to the said Moses I giue half my debts in Ould England, if they may be recouered. Daughter Elizabeth to be paid her portion within three months after my decease.

17th of the 4th mo., commonly called June, 1643 [according to the old reconing which fixed the beginning of the year in March].

Witnesses John Mills,
Daniel Weld

"As an addition to this my last will, I Moses Paine bequeath unto my wife, Judith Paine, twenty shillings, to be paid her within the space of ten yeares after my decease.
20th 4th m., 1643. [15]

Richard Brackett,
Henry Adams,
John Mills."

(After the death of her second husband, Moses, Judith married for a third time, and became the wife of Robert Hull,

whose son John, interestingly enough, had already married her daughter, Judith Quincy.)

In 1638 "The Military Company of the Massachusetts" was organized, and granted special encouragement by the Court. Robert Keayne was chosen Captain. This was the first independent military company in Boston, and became an element of great influence. From the first it had been made up of picked men. It was a training school and authority in military art; and membership in its ranks became a badge of honorable military service. This company became the celebrated "Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company," the oldest and most notable military organization existing in America. Both Moses (Gen. VII, No. 33) and Stephen (Gen. VII, No. 34), his brother, and our direct-line descendant, were members of this distinguished military unit of Massachusetts. [5] [11]

In those days, when men's affairs were strictly ordered and wages and prices (or many of them) set by law, town officials were more numerous than they are today. In addition to the governing body of given townsmen (selectmen), we find other officials described in the Braintree records, such as the one of 1 March 17l3/14.

"The freeholders and other inhabitants of said Town Lawfully convened chose Co. Quinsey Moderator for that day.

Joseph Parmenter was then chosen clerk.

Selectmen were, Capt. John Mills
Deacon Allin
Lt. John Cleverly

	Ensign Peter Adams
	Sgt. Nehemiah Hayden
Constables	Samuel Penniman
	Thomas White
Town Treasurer	Mr. Joseph Crosbye
Tything Men	DEACON MOSES PAYN (sic) (Gen. VIII, No. 40)
	Benjamin Webb
	SGT. SAMUEL PAYN (sic) (Gen. VIII, No. 37)
Surveyors	Benjamin Beal. serjeant
	Nathiel Spear
	Samuel French
	Ebenezer Spear
Fence Viewers	Joseph Bracket
	John Bass Jr.
	Thomas French
	Joseph Allin Junior

"The meet persons that were then chosen, to se to that Act as to Regulations of swine were Moses Curtis, Jonathan Newcomb, Samuel Hatden son of Nehemiah Hayden and John French son of Dependance French.

"Sealer of Leather, was John Beall."

As indicated above, Moses Paine (Gen. VII, No. 33), along with many of the Selectmen of Braintree, participated in its

fledgling town government. As I searched through the Braintree town records, the name of Moses Paine frequently was noted. What follows are some additional illustrations from verbatim accounts of his participation in the Braintree town government:

"28th 12mo 1658. At two meeting agreed by the inhabitants to exchange so much land with Deacon Bass as Chapt. Brackitt, Moses Paine, Deacon Allis, Willi Nedam should judge reasonable—

"Agreed by the inhabitants of the Towne of Brantry att two meetings that Chapt. Richard Brackitt, Deacon Allis, Moses Paine, William Needam these persons should goe uth Deacon Bass and see his demands of the Towne in way of Exchange of some land of his in the chaptaines plaine so called and as these persons could agree the Towne did consent; wheras the said persons have agreen and consented that Deacon Base shall take in for his propriety of the Townes Common land twelve rods wide att the head line upon the rockes southward; and leave out to the Townes Common for their propriety twelve rods wide of the said Deacon Bases land one the other side next the furnis in lew therof; the ledge of rockes that runs at the head of the captaines plaine, and so to abound tree att the corner of the swamp towards the mill pond in his line." [12]

"24th December 65

"A highway layd out into the Common by John Mills through [Hunes] lot

"This highway layd out by Deacon Base Capt. Brackitt Moses Paine & William Nedam; which way is layd out from the bridge going up the hill before John Milles so ranging with a

ledge of great rockes on the lower side next the swamp; to lie two rods wid upward from the rockes; and so to goe along to pass through the swamp where themselfes have formerly made it. . . ." (12)

When land was bought from the Indians, it was divided among the "proprietors," partly by lot and partly by proportional investment. A main street, often as much as 20 rods (320 feet) wide was fenced for a common grazing ground, and each proprietor received a home lot of eight square acres and some meadowland for crops and grazing.

On 16 October 1660, in answer to a petition from the inhabitants of Braintree, Gregory Belcher, James Penniman, Tho. Mekins, Moses Paine, Edmund Quincy, Robert Twelves and Peter Brackett, the Court "granted a plantation of eight miles square, for the encouragement of those who should settle there and to preserve the place from unnecessary waste." (2)

Apparently little was transacted until 22 May 1662, when a meeting was held in regard to the settlement of the Plantation granted at Netmocke.

On 22 April 1662, Moses Paine and Peter Brackett of Braintree, for 24 pounds sterling, purchased from Anawasanauk, Quashoamitt, Great John and Namsconont, Indian Chiefs, a tract of land situated about 15 miles from Medfield.

Inasmuch as the "Plantation at Netmocke" had no corporate existence at this time, the Indian deed of the "eight miles square," which, it seems, had been already granted by the General Court, was made to Moses Paine and Peter Brackett.

The Indian deed was partially executed on the 22nd of April 1662, but was not fully completed until 8 September 1662, when "Great John set to his hand and seal and delivered the deed to Moses Paine and Peter Brackett." [2]

The Indian Deed

To all Xpian people to whom these presents shall come, Anawassanauke, alias John, and Quashaamiit, alias William, of Blewe Hills, and Great John, Namsconont and Upanbohqueen, alias Jacob of Natick, sendeth Greeting: Know yee that the said Anawassanauke, Quashaamiit, Great John, Namsconont and Upanbohqueen for divers good and vallewable considerations them theere unto Moovinge and especiall for and in consideration of the summe of twenty fower pound Ster. to them in had payd by Moses Payne and Peter Brackett both of Braintre the receipt whereof they doe acknowledg by these presents, and thereof and every part and parcel thereof, doth exonerate, acquitt and discharge them the said Moses Payne and Peter Brackett, there heyres and assignes forever by these presents, Hath given, granted, bargained, sould, eneoffed & confirmed unto Moses Payne and Peter Brackett of Braintre afore said there heyres and assignes for ever, A Tract of Lands of Eight Miles square lying about fifteen miles from Medfield; and is

bounded one Mille to the east of a small river wch lyeth about three Milles to the Eastward of Nipmug Great Pond and so-from the line of one Mille on the East of that small river is to runn eight Milles West ot Westerly and is to lye three miles to the south or southward of the Parth that leads to Nipmugg Great Pond and five Milles on the other side of that Parth north or Northwards together with all the trees and timber, woods, underwoods standing, lyeing and growing thereon, wth all the meadows, swamps, Rivers and Brooks lyeing within the sd eight miles square with all other privileges and appurtenances belonginge or any ways apertayninge there unto. To Have and to Hould the said Eight Milles square as it is bounded, Together with all the trees and timber, with the underwoods standing, lyeing and groweinge thereon wth all ye Meadows, Swamps, Rivers, and Ponds and Brooks lyeinge with in this eight milles square as it is bounded with all other privileges and apertenances belonging or any wayes apertayning there unto the said Moses Payne and Peter Brackett theire heires and assigns for ever, and to theire only proper use and behoofe of them the sd Moses Payne and Peter Brackett,theire heyers and assignes forever, to be holden in fee Sockage and in Capetye nor by Knights service. And the said Anawassanauke, allis John, and Quashaamiit allis William, Great John, Namsconont allis Peoter and Upanbohqueen allis Jacob

doth covenant, promise and grant by these presents that they the sd Anawassanauke, Quashaamiit, Great John, Namsconont & Upanbohqueen are the true and proper owners & proprietors of the sd bargayned premises at the time of the bargayne & sale thereof and that the said premises are free and clere & clerely acquitted, exonerated & discharged of for & from all and all manner of former bargaynes, sales, gifts, titles, mortgages, actions, suits, arrests, attachments, judgments, executions, extent or incumbrance what soever from the beginning of the World until the time of the Sale and bargayne thereof. And the said Anawassanauke, Quashaamiit, Great John, Namasconont & Upanbohqueen Doth Covenant, promise and grant by these presents all and singular the said bargained premises with the appurtenances to warrant, acquit & defend unto the sd Moses Payne and Peter Brackett there heyres & assignes forever against all Indians or English people by from or under them clayming any right, title or interest of or into the same or any part thereof forever by these presents and taht it shall and may be lawful to and for the sd. Moses Payne and Peter Brackett to Record & enroll or cause to be recorded and enrolled the title or Tenor of these presents according to the true intent and meaning thereof and according to the usual manner and order of recording Deeds & evidences in such case made and provided.

In wittness whereof the said Anawassanauke, Quash-aamiit, Great John, Nameconont and Upanbohqueen have sett to theere hands & seales this twenty two of April one thousand six hundred and sixty two.

The words "by from or under them" in the sixth line, as also that the Indians specified in this deed, together with there heyres forever have liberty to fish, fowle & hunt so far as any law of this jurisdiction alloweth in other places not wth standing anything in this Deed, this was before the sealinge hereof.

Signed, sealed and delivered the day and year above written in the presence of John Eliot, senior, John Eliot, junior, Daniel Weld, senior.

Great John set to his hand & seal and delivered the deed to Moses Payne & Peter Brackett this 8th day of September 1662.

as witnesses

William Allis, Nathaniel Brackett
Anawassanauke,
his ∂ Marke and A seale
Quashaamiit,
his X Marke and A seale
Namsconont,
his ℨ Marke and A seale
Great John,
his marke and A seale
A seale ℨ and noe hand.

Moses Paine and Peter Brackett for some reason withheld the assignment of the foregoing Deed to the Town until directed by the General Court to do so; when we find endorsed upon the deed the following instrument:

> "Wee Moses Payne and Peter Brackett doe assigne over all our right, title and Interest in this Deed unto the Selectmen of the Town of Mendon for the use of the said Towne, as wittness our hands.
>
> Peoter Brackett
> Moses Payne
>
> May ye 12, 1670" [2]

The above is believed to be a true copy of the original Deed as it was entered in the first volume of the Town records as early as 1667, by the person who was especially deputed by the Committee to enter "the public acts from the beginning of the Plantation." The original was very probably lost at the desertion of the Town during King Philip's war in 1675. The inhabitants did not return until 1680. [9]

A great deal of research has gone into developing accurate accounts of the events of the Indian wars of New England. A particularly good reference was prepared by George Madison Bodge; it provides a critical account of the Indian war specifically known as *King Philip's War of 1675–1677.* [4]

Since Moses Paine (Gen. VII, No. 33) and his son Moses (Gen. VIII, No. 40) served in this war, as recorded in Bodge's account, this writer felt the following information would be of interest to his descendants.

Every soldier who served in that war is credited with military service, and the name of the officer under whom or the garrison at which he served is included in the credit. The date at which payment is made is provided in the "Cash" account, but the time and place of service is not designated, nor is the residence or any further information about the soldier given. Some of the soldiers served at different times and under different officers. It was therefore necessary to check family names, areas or towns in Massachusetts where they resided, and dates of service in order to verify relationships of specific family members who served.

As found in all previous generations, the writer has identified four styles used in spelling our family name, viz: Payne, Payn, Paine and Pain. In the lists of soldiers credited with military service, these variations often occurred. It must be remembered that the names were entered from "Debentures" made by the clerks of companies, and the names were entered on company rolls as each man was understood to pronounce his own name, and unless the clerk was acquainted with the name, he spelled it by the easiest method; hence variations.

"King Philip's War" took its name from the recognized leader of that conflict, whose Indian name was Metacom or Pometacom or Metacomet, but whom the English called Philip. He was the second son of Massasoit, who at the settlement of the English at Plymouth and Boston seems to have been chief of all the various tribes and fragments of tribes living between the Charles River and Narraganset Bay, and including that part of Rhode Island east of the Bay, and also the Cape Cod tribes.

Like water running downhill, war was inevitable, and it began in the summer of 1675.

At its opening, the colonial militia was quite efficiently organized. Each county had its regiment of "trained soldiers." The regiments of Suffolk and Middlesex counties consisted of fifteen companies of Foot and one Cavalry each. There were seventy-three organized companies in the Massachusetts Colony, besides an independent cavalry company called the "Three County Troop," made up of Suffolk, Middlesex and Essex. The highest military officer of the colony was Major General Daniel Denison, of Ipswich. These local companies were not sent on active service out of their own towns, but men were impressed and placed under officers appointed for special service by the Council.

Each company of foot soldiers had a Captain, Lieutenant, Ensign, Clerk, Sergeants, Corporals, and a Drummer. Cavalry had Cornet instead of Ensign and a Trumpeter and Quartermaster. The regular number of privates in foot companies was seventy, in the cavalry fifty. On special service it was more.

The pay of soldiers was 6s. per week, and 5s. was paid for their "dyet". Plymouth Colony paid the private soldiers 2s. per day, Drummer 2s.6d., Sergeant 3s., Ensign 4s., "Lieftenant" 5s., Captain 6s. A "Chyrugion" or doctor was attached to each expedition. A chaplain also generally served with each expedition. The price paid for horses was 18d. per week. Prices of clothing included "wastcoats," 6s., drawers 5s. 6d., "stockings" 2s., shirts 6s., and shoes 4s.

On the Mount Hope expedition, the soldiers used the old matchlock musket, the "Regulation" weapon of that time; but

it was later discarded as not as serviceable as the flintlock or "snaphance." There were no bayonets in use, but each company at first had a number of Pikemen, soon found to be useless in an Indian fight. The matchlock was an exceedingly cumbersome weapon, and was too long and heavy to fire at arm's length, so each soldier carried a "rest" (a crotched staff pointed at the foot with iron, and attached to his wrist by a string). No. 7 of the orders in musket drill, "*Elton's Tactics*," was, "put the string of your rest about your left wrist." The Indians always used the flintlock, and used "slugs", or heavy shot, instead of bullets.

The other equipment of a foot soldier was a leather belt passing over the right shoulder and under the left arm and containing a dozen or more round boxes, each holding one charge of powder. A bag of bullets and a horn of priming-powder was also attached to this belt. [4]

In late 1675, both Moses Paine (Gen. VII, No. 33), and his son, Moses (Gen. VIII, No. 40), became members of the Suffolk Troop under the command of Lieutenant Thomas Brattle (promoted to Captain, 5 May 1676). According to a report in Bodge's book, *Soldiers in King Philip's War*, the account, soon to follow, portrays some of the military action Moses and his son may have seen. [4]

It should be noted that Moses (Gen. VII, No. 33) was fifty-two when King Philip's War began. Although he seems rather old to have been called to active duty, it should be understood that all men between the ages of sixteen and sixty were subject to a call-up at that time.

In Bodge's account of soldiers credited under the command of Captain Thomas Brattle, 24 August 1676, the name Moses

"The musquet is to be used in respect, it carries a double bullet and is more weighty. The souldier uses a staffe breast high, in the one end a pike to pitch on the ground, and in the other an iron forke to reste his peece upon, and a hole a little beneath same in the staffe; whereunto he doth add a string, which tied and wrapped around his wrist, yealdes him commodity to train his forke of staffe after him, whilst he in skirmish doth charge his musquet afresh with pouder and bullet."

Military Treatise 1619

Paine was listed twice. We can, in all probability, conclude that this reference was made to both father and son as participating in the Mt. Hope Campaign. In addition, Stephen (Gen. VII, No. 34), our direct-line descendant and younger brother of Moses (Gen. VII, No. 33), also served in the Mt. Hope Campaign. His participation will be discussed in the next Chapter.

In 1675 the town of Braintree was called upon to furnish nineteen men for active duty, seven of them mounted. These figures now seem meager, yet a call for nineteen men was to the Braintree of 1675—with its ninety families—as heavy a draft as would have been a call for 600 men from those inhabiting the same territory during the Civil War, a little less than two centuries later.

"On May 15th, 1676, in the expedition to Hassanamesit under Capt. Henchman, Capt. Brattle, with a party of horse, fell upon the Indians between Mendon and Hassanamesit and killed about twenty, of who four were squaws. The enemy dispersed into the swamps, and the main body escaped.

"On May 24th, Capt. Brattle 'with a troope of horse,' about fifty, went in pursuit of the Indians 'that had newly done spoyle at Seaconcke.' With a small party of foot, he arrived at the Falls of 'Pocatuck River,' being on the Seaconcke side. The Indians appeared on the opposite side in force. Leaving the foot behind, Captain Brattle led the troopers up the river, where they crossed with great difficulty, and soon came down upon the Indians and put them to a disastrous flight, capturing large stores of their fish and other supplies, killing several. One of the English was killed, and Cornet Elliot was wounded in the hand.

"The dead soldier was carried to Seaconcke and buried. An Indian boy was captured who testified that these Indians were three or four hundred, and belonged to 'Nepsachuit.'" (4)

On 30 June 1676, Captain Brattle was sent on an expedition to Mt. Hope on Narragansett Bay. The troop would arrive and, in all probability, Moses (Gen. VII, No. 33) would join his brother, Stephen (Gen. VII, No. 34), who was a trooper serving under Captain Thomas Prentice, as both units moved toward Mt. Hope.

Captain Brattle's instruction were as follows: "You are to take twenty of your troope with such officers as you shall see meete, together with an officer & ten Troopers of Leftenant Hassey's Troope and with them march with all expedition to Dedham where are ordered to be an officer with eighteen foote souldiers mounted from Dorchester, sixe from Roxbury and twenty from Dedham with an officer . . . You are to march with your Troopers & Dragoons to be at John Woodcocks by midnight where you shall meete with an Indian Pylot and two files of musketeers which Pylot hath engaged to bring you upon Phillip and his Company who are not above thirty men as he saith & not ten miles from Woodcocks, be sure to secure your Pylot to prevent falsehood and escape. You are to endeavour with your utmost diligence to come up with the enemy and Coming up with him, or any other of them, you are to subdue kill and destroy, in your marches take heed of Ambushments and see you keepe your souldiers in Command and that they moove with as much sylence as may be, that you be not prevented. In case the enemy should be past to Mount Hope and that you can meete with Plymouth forces you are to Joyne

with them. If upon Intelligence you may probably Come up with enemy to fight subdue & destroy them.

". . . In case you meete not with a Pylot at Woodcocks you are to send to Mr. Newman at Rehoboth and lett him know of your being there, and wayting to endeavour to surprise Phillip; and In case that faile, if upon Intelligence you have opportunity to fall upon any other of the enemy you are to attend that; Upon all occasions & opportunity you are to Advise us of your motions and of Gods dealings with you; for your so doing these are your order and warrant. Given at Boston the thirtieth day of June 1676. By the Governour & Council of the Mass." [7]

In this expedition the plan was carried out, but when they arrived at the swamp, they found the wily chief and his bodyguard "newly gone." They, however, joined with the Plymouth forces under command of Major Bradford, and succeeded, before their return home in the latter part of July, in securing the Plymouth and southern towns, and in killing or capturing one hundred fifty of the enemy. [4]

The following is an abbreviated version of the roster of soldiers credited with service, and the compensation due them while under the command of Captain Thomas Brattle. [4]

19 October 1675	pd	s	d
George Berbek	00	10	00
December 20th			
John Paison	00	10	00
Samuel Thatcher	00	10	00
Caleb Braunt	00	10	00
Thomas Brattle, Lt.	01	05	00

John Bennet	00	10	00
Soloman Phips	00	10	00
William Kent	00	10	00
Samuel Payson	00	17	00

August 24, 1676

Ebenezer Williams	01	12	10
Joshuah Henshaw	01	07	06
John Newell	02	02	00
Richard Scott	02	02	00
John Pinder	00	15	08
James Chevers	00	18	09
John Barrett	01	12	10
Joseph Birch	01	12	10
Thomas Leonard	00	15	08
MOSES PAINE	01	11	05
Hugh Taylor	00	15	08
Jonathan Atherton	01	10	00
Thomas Adams	00	15	08
John Needham	01	12	10
Elisha Foster	01	04	08
Samuel Church	01	07	00
Joshuah Lamb	02	02	10
Ebenezer Heinden	01	11	05
John Bennett	02	02	09
Richard Francis	01	00	00
Denis Syhy	02	17	09
Richard Hall	01	18	10
MOSES PAINE	01	08	07
Paltiel Grover	01	12	10
Samuel Williams	01	17	06

Samuel Maxfield	01	04	08
Ephraim Regimant	01	00	00
September 23d 1676			
Thomas Browne	01	02	10
John Winter	01	02	10
John Tolman	02	01	05
John Turtle	01	12	10
Zechariah Fowle	00	08	06
James Pemerton	00	14	08
William Ager	01	05	08
John Mason	01	12	10
Jonathon Gilbert	02	00	00
Samuel Sumner	00	19	08

We shall never know whether Moses (Gen. VII, No. 33) and his son, Moses, met with Stephen (Gen. VII, No.34) or not. We can only surmise that they probably did, and if so, they no doubt talked about those things brothers and soldiers might talk about about under similar conditions: the health of one another, the uncertainty of the future, and when they might be going home. We do know that all three lived through this engagement and returned home sometime before 1677.

Moses Paine (Gen. VII, No. 33) lived in Braintree, Mass., for about thirty-three years. He and his wife, Elizabeth, moved to Boston sometime before 1671, since we find that Moses held the title of "ensign", so recorded in Roberts' History (12), from 1655, and also recorded in the *Records of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay* [6]. Here we find under the date of 8 June 1671 the item, "Moses Paine, ensign to the foote company at Braintree being thence removed, this court doth appoint Robert

Twelve to be ensign . . ." The record further indicates that "Ensign" Moses Paine was named as deputy for Braintree in 1666 and 1668.

Moses Paine (Gen. VII, No. 33) appears in the Boston Records as early as 1672 as clerk of the market, and later as a constable, an inspector, a surveyor, and a licensed taverner.

In the Boston tax list for 1681, Division No. 8, Captain John Hill's Company, we find three Paines identified: Moses Paine Sen'r, Moses Paine Jr., and William Paine. Moses Paine (Jr) does not appear thereafter by that designation, and when Moses Paine (Gen. VII, No. 33) of Boston, "taverner," died, administration was granted to William Paine, his son (his widow, Sarah, not appearing). The date of the decree was January 1690/91.[16] Nor was Moses Paine, son of Moses (Gen. VII, No. 33), a party to the deed of partition dated 4 September 1697, where part or all of grandfather William Colborne's devise to his daughter, Elizabeth Paine, and her children in his will dated 1 August 1662, was divided among William Payne of Boston, joiner, grandson of Elder William Colborne, of Boston, Mary Small of Boston, widow of Thomas Powell of Boston, mariner, and Margaret his wife, and Thomas Walker Jun'r of Boston, Brickburner, and Rebecca his wife. Mary, Margaret and Rebecca were each described as a granddaughter of the said William Colborne and a sister of the said William Payne, and the land divided was located at the south end of Boston.[15] See below.

From the above, we can assume that Moses Paine, grandson of Moses (Gen. VII, No. 33), lived to be a taxpayer in 1681, and to convey his share of his grandfather's estate in the same year.

He probably died before 1690, when William claimed adminstration of his father's estate, a responsibility that would naturally have gone to the oldest living son.

The Suffolk Co. Deeds describes the Paines of Boston as follows: "William Paine of Boston and Sarah his wife, Mary Small of Boston, widow, Thomas Walker, Jr., of Boston and Rebecca his wife, which said William Paine, Mary Small, and Rebecca Walker were three of the children of Moses Paine, late of Boston, Innholder, deceased, intestate, and grandchildren of Elder William Colburn late of Boston, also deceased, sell to Thomas Powell of Boston, Mariner, 3/4 of the messuage known as the *White Horse Inn* in present tenure of the said Moses Powell being the whole land that was bequeathed unto the said Moses Paine by the last will of said Grandfather William Colburn, dated 1 August 1662, 27 April 1700." [15]

REFERENCES FOR THIS CHAPTER

1. Adams, Charles F., *Three Episodes in Massachusetts History: Volume II*; New York: Houghton, Mifflin Co., 1892, p. 287, 769.

2. Barber, John W., *Annals of Mendon*, p. 2–7.

3. Beebe, Lucius, *Boston and the Legend.* New York: D. Appleton-Century Co., 1935. pp. 3–5, 6–10, 13–15.

4. Bodge, George M., *Soldiers in King Philip's War.* Reprint from the original, Boston: 1906. Baltimore Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc. 1991, pp. 262–265.

5. General Court Files, Boston, 1670.

6. Lechford Notebook, p. 77.

7. Massachusetts Archives, Vol. 69, pp. 24,25.

8. Massachusetts Colony Records, I, 271.

9. Montgomery, *American Genealogist*, Vol. 23, pp. 191–192.

10. *New England Historical and Genealogical Society*, Vol. 21, p. 380, Vol. 65, pp. 290–291.

11. Paine, H.D., *Paine Family Records*, 1882–83. p. 164–165.

12. *Records of the Town of Braintree, Mass., 1640–1793.* Edited by Samuel Bates; Mass.: Daniel H. Huxford, Printer, 1886. pp. 18–21, 629, 495, 819–820.

13. Roberts, *Records of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company*; pp. 141, 295, 362.

14. *Society of Colonial Wars, 1899–1902*, p. 723.

15. Suffolk Probate, Vol. 8, p. 154; Vol. 12, p. 201; Vol. 19, p. 347, Vol. 47, p. 201.

16. Wertenbaker, T.J., *Puritan Oligarchy, The.* New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1947. p. 88.

CHAPTER IX

Stephen Paine (Gen. VII, No. 34) and His Descendants

Man will endure because he has a soul, a spirit capable of compassion and sacrifice and endurance. The poet's, the writer's duty is to write about these things. It is his privilege to help man endure by lighting his heart, by reminding him of the courage and honor and hope and pride and compassion and pity and sacrifice which has been the glories of the past.

—WILLIAM FAULKNER

STEPHEN PAINE (Gen. VII, No. 34), bap. 7 May 1626, at Tenterden, Kent, England; d. 29 July 1691, at Braintree, Massachusetts; m. 15 November 1651, Braintree, Mass., to Hannah Bass, dau. of Deacon Samuel Bass, b. in England c. 1631 (living in Braintree, Mass. 1692); she d. prob. at Taunton, Mass.

Residence: Braintree, Massachusetts.
Admission to freeman in 1653.

Service: "Stephen Paine (1626–91), contributed largely to expenses of earlier Indian Wars." [9]

"Sergeant, Ancient and Honorable Artillery Co., of Boston, Mass., in 1649." [8]
"Served in the Mt. Hope Campaign [1675]under Captain Prentice." [3]
"Trooper under Lieutenant Edward Oakes, 1675–76." [3]

GENERATION VIII

Children of Stephen (Gen. VII, No. 34) and Hannah (Bass) Paine: [7]

36. STEPHEN (Gen. VIII, No. 36), b. 8 March 1653, d. 24 May 1690, at Braintree, Mass. Direct-line descendant.
37. Samuel (Gen. VIII, No. 37), b. 10 June 1654, d. bet.1710 and 1715, prob. at Braintree, Mass., m. Mary Penniman 4 April 1678, by Mr. Joseph Dudley.

    Children of Samuel and Mary (Penniman) Paine:

    a. Mary, b. 27 October 1680, Braintree, Mass.
    b. Lydia, b. 6 January 1681/2, Braintree, Mass., m. Joseph Sawin, 1714, Braintree, Mass.
    c. Samuel, b. 26 November 1684, Braintree, Mass., m. Rachel _____; d. 1739.
    d. Hannah, b. 1 February 1687, Braintree, Mass.
    e. Joseph, b. 3 August 1689, Braintree, Mass., m. Sarah Powell, 1717.
    f. Mehitable, 8 December 1693, Braintree, Mass., m. David Ames, 10 December 1719.
    g. Benjamin, b. 28 December 1689, Braintree, Mass.

In the town records of Braintree, Mass. of 1693, we find Stephen's son, Samuel Paine (Gen. VIII, No. 37), involved in town government. At the age of thirty-nine, and during the year his daughter, Mehitable, was born, the following was recorded:

"At a Publik Towne meeting the inhabitants of the Towne of Brantrey being convened for the chois of Town Officers they chos first a Towne clark Samuel Tompson Senior for Selectmen they chos for the year 1693.

Commisioner—	ensign Samuel Peniman. He was the father of Mary (Peniman) Paine.
Constables—	John Webb *SAMUEL PAINE* (Gen. VIII, No. 37).
Tithingmen—	Caleb Hubortt Thomas White Martin Sanders Samuel Savill Theophilus Curtis
Surveyers of Highways —	Nehemiah Hayden John French John Rugles Juneor Jos. Adams Senior
Vewors of Fences for the year 1693 for Manaticutt [sic]—	Corporal John Lamb Dependance French
for the fore feild [sic]—	Peter Nucom Samuel Nucom

for the Stony Feild [sic]— Samuel Bas
carpenter. Joseph Bas junior

for the farm feild— John Bas junior
Benjamin Neal" (2)

To establish roadways, the Selectmen of Braintree were charged with the responsibility of establishing boundary lines by using markers such as trees, rocks and other natural features to identify locations.

In 1713, the Selectmen of Braintree, "Laid out a Way from Rock Island Meadow, bounded by Two Oaks Trees, blazed on the right hand, next by a rock on the left then by a walnut tree on the right, by the side of a ledge of Rocks, on the same hand other mark't Trees, till they meet with an old path leading towards the meadows of Robert Hobart . . . "

On May 24th 1714, we find, "The highway from William Nightingale is one rod and half wide from the middle of the old beaten Road each till it comes to the heither end of the widow—and from thence to a white oak Tree blazed.

"Blazed trees on the west side till it comes to the swamp, and then from the middle of the beaten Road one Rod and half wide each side till it comes to a walnut Tree markd. between the Lot of Caleb Hobart & Joseph Neall and so by markd Trees on the west side to the square & compasses and so by markd Trees on the West side till it comes to the north end of Joseph Pains* Fences and then from the middle of the beaten road, to

* Joseph Payne was born in 1689, and was the son of Samuel (Gen. VIII, No. 37) and Mary (Penniman) Payne. Joseph married Sarah Powell in 1717. (See [e] above)

cirkuits ordnary, one Rod and half wide on each side, and then to run to SAMUEL PAYNS** fence at the west end of his House and upon a straight line to the Hill, the way to be three Rod from SAMUEL PAYNS** Fence, and then to run the middle Road by Bayleys Land till it comes to an highe stump, one Rod & half each side, the stump, and so along the Road, as now it runs three Rods wide till it comes to Moors Farm . . ." (2)

38. Hannah (Gen. VIII, No. 38) b. 28 October 1656; d. April 1724, at Braintree, Mass., m. 27 January 1673, Theophilus Curtis, of Braintree, Mass. (7)
39. Sarah, b. 9 January 1657; d. 19 September 1742; m. Roger Billings of Dorchester, Mass., 22 January 1678.

When Sarah (Paine) Billings died 19 September 1742, the obituary writer for the Boston News Letter noted:

> "Billings—Dorchester Farms, Sept. 29, [1742].
>
> "On the 19th Instant died, on the 22d was Inter'd Mrs. Sara Billings (Widow of Cap. Roger Billings) having almost completed her 85th year. She was blessed with a useful and comfortable old Age and came to her Grave as a Shock of Corn in its Season. It's worthy of Remark that altho' she liv'd to such an advanc'd Age and had 14 children, she never buried one, but they all now survive her, being 7 sons and 7 daughters, the Eldest being in her 63d Year, and the Youngest in his 40th.

** Samuel was born 4 October 1654, and was the son of Stephen (Gen. VII, No. 34) and Hannah (Bass) Payne. Samuel married Mary (Penniman) Payne 4 April 1678. (See [37] above.)

> "The old Gentlewoman was present at the Funeral of one of her Great-Great-Grand Children of the 5th generation a year or two ago—and another of the same generation now attended her funeral." (4)

Sara was the daughter of Stephen and Hannah (Bass) Paine of Braintree. As noted in the above announcement, she married Roger Billings, son of Robert and Hannah, and grandson of Roger and Hannah, who were among the early settlers of Dorchester, Massachusetts. Captain Billings was born 18 November 1657; d. 27 January 1717/8, and he and Sarah were married "by the worshipfull Mr. Dudlow January 22d 1678." (9)

In my research I have only been able to identify two of Sara's fourteen children, as referred to in her obituary.

a. William, b. 27 July 1689.

b. Sarah, b. 27 February 1687.

As previously noted, Hannah Bass, daughter of Deacon Samuel Bass, became the wife of Stephen Paine (Gen. VII, No. 34) 15 November 1651. Deacon Bass, under the tradition of deacons in the colonial period, was held in very high regard. On the Sabbath he sat at his own bench before the pulpit, and week-days he and the magistrate and the officers of the militia were the titled men of the village. Samuel, born in England in 1601, was Braintree's first deacon, coming to New England in 1632, first settling in Roxbury, then moving to Braintree in 1640. He purchased lands in the Braintree area, and they remained in the hands of his descendants for over two hundred years. Deacon Bass was received into the communion of the church in July of 1640, and chosen deacon, holding this office

ADDENDUM
114-a

I am indebted to Mr. Merlyn Nellist of Bellevue, WA., for providing the following family group records showing prior and subsequent ancestry of Capt. Roger Billing and Sarah Paine (Gen. VIII, No. 39).

The earliest (known to date) ancestor was Roger Billing, b. 1618, Tauton, Somerset Co., England; d. 15 Nov. 1683, Norfolk Co., MA.; m. Hannah ; d. 21 Jun 1662, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.

Children of Roger and Hannah Billing:

a. Mary, b. 10 Aug. 1643, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.; d. 4 Jan. 1643/44, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.

b. Mary, chr. 23 Nov. 1645, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.

c. Joseph.

d. Ebenezer (Capt.), chr. 28 Oct. 1651, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.; d. 25 Jan. 1717/18, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.; m. Hannah .

* e. Roger, (See 39 Below.)

f. Elizabeth, b. 27 Oct. 1659, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.; chr. 27 Dec. 1659, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.

g. Zipporah, b. 21 May 1662, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.; chr. 22 Jul 1662, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.; d. 8 Oct. 1676, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.

h. Jonathan.

39. Sarah Paine, (Gen. VIII, No. 39) b. 1 Nov. 1657, Braintree, Norfolk Co., MA.; d. 19 Sep. 1742, Dorchester, Norfolk, Co., MA.; bur. 22 Sep. 1742, Dorchester Farms, Norfolk Co, MA. m. Roger Billing 22 Jan. 1678, he. b. Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA. 18 Nov. 1657; d. Norfolk Co., MA., 27 Jan. 1717/1718.

Children of Capt. Roger and Sarah (Paine) Billing:

a. Hannah, b. 21 Jan. 1679, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA., chr. 16 Jul 1680.

b. Joseph, b. 27 May 1681.

c. John, (Major), b. 10 Mar. 1683, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA., chr. 15 May 1683; d. 3 May 1748; m. Mary Vose, 10 Mar. 1724, Milton, MA.

d. Mehitable, b. 21 Jan. 1684, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA., chr. 25 Feb. 1693/1694, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.

e. William, b. 27 Jul. 1689, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA., chr. 29 Aug. 1686, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA., m. Ruth Crehore 17 Jun. 1719.

f. Sarah, b. 27 Feb. 1687/88, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA., chr. 15 May 1687/88, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.

g. Steven (Stephen), b. 27 Aug. 1691, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.; Chr. 27 Sep. 1691 Dorchester, Norfolk, MA.; d. 10 Jun. 1767, Canton, MA.; m. Elizabeth Fenno, 9 Jun. 1724.

h. Moses, b. 20 Nov. 1696, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.; chr. 22 Dec. 1696,

Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.; d. 4 May 1766; m. Meriam Vose, 6 May 1725, Milton, MA.

i. Ann, b. 4 Aug. 1698, Dorchester, Norfolk MA.

j. Abigail, b. 15 Feb. 1700, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.; d. 4 Sep. 1801.

k. Elizabeth, b. 21 Jun. 1701, Dorchester, Norfolk Co., MA.

until his death in 1694. At the time of his death, he had seen one hundred amd sixty-two descendants. [1]

It is interesting to note that in 1657, a son of Deacon Bass, named John, married Ruth Alden, the daughter of John and Priscilla Alden of Plymouth and Mayflower fame.

Among the great-grandchildren of Samuel Bass was Samuel Paine (Gen. IX, No. 46), who was bap. 14 April 1689, and died about 1738 in Braintree, Massachusetts. He was the son of Stephen and Ellen (Veasey) Paine (Gen. VIII, No. 36).* (See Chapter X)

40. Moses (Gen. VIII, No. 40), b. 26 March 1660; d. 22 June 1746; m. Mary Pierce, 1665–1745.

    Children of Moses and Mary (Pierce) Paine:

    a. Mary, b. 14 May 1689; m. Samuel Hayward.

    b. Hannah, b. 2 April 1692; m. Joseph Nightingale.

    c. Moses, b. 31 October 1694; d. 12 September 1697.

    d. Sarah, b. 3 July 1697/8; m _____ Adams.

    e. Moses, b. 13 June 1700; d. 1760 at Braintree, Mass; m. Abigail Adams, b.13 August 1698 at Braintree, Mass.; m. 31 October 1722/3. Abigail was an aunt of President John Adams. She d. prob. at Braintree, Mass. [7]

        Children of Moses and Abigail (Adams) Paine:

        i. Abigail, b. 11 December 1728.

        ii. Mary, b. 30 January 1730.

        iii. Moses, b. 30 March 1732.

iv. Hannah, b. 17 October 1734.

v. David, bap. 15 March 1737/8.

vi. Bethiah, bap. 4 February 1741/2.

The last two children are not mentioned in any of the Paine or Adams genealogies, but they appear as children of Moses Paine in the records of the First Church of Braintree, as follows: "David, Bapt. March 15, 1737–8", and "Bethiah, bap. Feb. 4, 1741–2." The fact that the records of the First Church at this time were unindexed probably accounts for the omission of the names of David and Bethiah Paine from the genealogies.

In the settlement of the estate of Moses Paine (married to Abigail Adams), we find that, "On December 16, 1763, the property was divided between Moses Paine, the eldest son, Hannah Wadsworth, Bethiah Hunt, and David Paine, who acted as administrator. The real estate, not admitting of a division, was settled upon David, he to pay the other heirs their shares." [12]

The first account of David Paine as administrator of his father's estate was given 2 July 1762. [12]

The final account was filed 5 September 1762. [12]

An inventory of the estate signed by John Adams, Jonathan Webb, and Peter Adams is found also in the Suffolk Probate. [11]

An appraisal of the estate signed by Samuel Bass, Jonathan Webb and Peter Adams is found in the Suffolk Probate Records. [12]

Aaron, b. November 1703, d. 24 February 1709/10.

Last child of Moses (Gen. VIII, No. 40) and Mary (Pierce) Paine. (7)

The following shows the actual lettering and spelling of words on the grave stones of Deacon Moses and Mary (Pierce) Paine, in the cemetery across the street from the United First Parish Church (Unitarian), in Quincy, Massachusetts:

Here lies buried
the body of Mrs. Mary
Pain wife of deacon
Moses Pain aged
78 years
who died july 4th
1 7 4 3
and lived together 55 years
Here lyes the body
of deacon Moses
Paine decd June
the 22d 1 7 4 6
in the 87 year
of his age

Deacon Moses Paine m. Mary Pierce, probably at Dorchester, Mass. Mary b. 15 March 1665, probably at Dorchester, Mass.

Patee tells us that Deacon Moses Paine's will was probated 15 July 1746, and contained provisions for his children as follows:

To Moses Paine, his son, "The homestead, two acres of salt meadow, household movables, etc., and Mr. John Flavels works, in two volumes."

To his son-in-law, Samuel Hayward, "Ten shillings in money, old tenor, and no more, because of his being so often out of order, and discomposed in his mind."

To his daughter, Mary Hayward, "One acre of salt meadow, thirty pounds of money, old tenor, besides seventy pounds already received."

To the children of Hannah Nightingale, deceased, "Forty pounds in money, besides sixty-five pounds already received."

To his daughter, Sarah Adams, "Besides ninety pounds already received, he bequeaths one third of the money now in the hands of Mrs. Hannah Fairweather."

In conclusion, he says, "All my rights in Father Pierce's outlands in Dorchester, or Elsewhere, shall be equally divided between Moses Paine, Mary Hayward, and Hannah Nightingale's children, viz: Samuel and Joseph Nightingale." Moses Paine was made the sole executor, and the will was signed in the presence of Samuel Savell, Samuel Savell, Jr., and Joseph Marsh. [7]

Throughout the Braintree inventories and probated wills, wearing apparel and household furniture indicate a humble and almost austere simplicity. There seem to have been a few beds, and possibly one of feathers, but generally these were of wool or corn-husks, some blankets or coverlets; however, except in the cases of the more wealthy, there is no mention of bed linen. There was one table, and possibly two; a few chairs, perhaps a half dozen, but stools were chiefly used. Knives and forks are not mentioned in the probate inventories until many years later. The kitchen utensils seem to have consisted of a

brass and iron pot or two, and some pans. There would be a Bible in the house, and possibly a few other books; an old musket and sword and a mirror now and then. In the division of personal effects, "Benjamin Had a pair of Shoes," and "David Had a Beaver Hat," while "I Had one wosted Cap and a pair of old Shoues." A hat would thus descend from father to son, and for fifty years make its regular appearance at meetings. The wearing apparel of a whole family would be stored away for generations, with fashions changing little. [1]

Moses Paine (Gen. VIII, No. 40) was a deacon of the First Congregational Church of Braintree, Mass.

He was chosen town treasurer of Braintree for the years 1717–18–21, at forty shillings a year for services. [2]

41. John (Gen. VIII, No. 41), b. 21 August 1666; m. Deborah Neale, b. 1 September 1667, 20 June 1688/9. the same day his sister, Lydia, married Benjamin Neale, Deborah's brother.

    Children of John and Deborah (Neale) Paine:

    a. Moses, b. 7 November 1697; d. 6 December 1697.
    b. John, b. 13 August 1690; d. abt. 1706.
    c. Deborah, b. 28 September 1692; d. 19 July 1703.
    d. Stephen, b. 19 January 1693/4.
    e. Joseph, b. 26 October 1695.
    f. Benjamin, b. 6 March 1700.
    g. Seth, b. 16 January 1702.

42. Lydia (Gen. VIII, No. 42), b. 20 September 1670; m. Benjamin Neale 20 June 1688/9, the same day her brother, John, married Deborah Neale, Benjamin's sister. (Apparently, Benjamin's parents approved of

Lydia since they named a daughter, b. 2 October 1703, Lydia.)

Children of Benjamin and Lydia (Paine) Neale:

a. Jerusha, b. 2 October 1703; d. 8 March 1706.

b. Henry, b. 4 August 1697; d. 2 November 1697.

c. Abigail, b. 20 August 1698.

d. Jonathan, b. 13 October 1700.

e. Abijah, b. 22 December 1709.

The Stephen Paine (Gen. VIII, No. 34) family continued to reside in Braintree as one of about eighty families—representing a population of about five hundred persons— living mainly within the limits of what became later the North Precinct. In 1640, the English emigration to New England had already ceased, and for many years thereafter, the coming of new families into Braintree was systematically discouraged. In 1682 the population of the town was limited to about ninety or a hundred families at the most. Assuming that there were 143 families in the entire town in 1707 (and the enumeration of that year was undoubtedly thorough), during the next half century the population seems to have increased less than three-fold—for in the census of 1765, Braintree was returned as containing 357 families. [1]

As noted in the preceding chapter, Moses Paine (Gen. VII, No. 33) and his son, Moses (Gen. VIII), served the colony of Massachusetts during the Mount Hope campaign of King Philip's War. Stephen (Gen. VII, No. 34), Moses Paine's younger brother, was a trooper serving with Captain Thomas Prentice during the same engagement. [3]

One of the three branches of the colonial militia was the branch of service known as the "Troopers", and in some respects it was the most important. For many years the colony sought to increase the number of horses, and as early as 1648, laws were passed encouraging the formation of cavalry companies. Those who would enlist as troopers in local companies and keep horses were allowed five shillings per year, and their head-and-horse-tax rescinded. It naturally followed that the most thrifty and well-to-do in the colony would become troopers, and the men of greatest ability and influence would be made their officers. The Middlesex Troop was commanded by Captain Thomas Prentice, and Stephen was a trooper in his company.

In the Mount Hope campaign the troopers were mostly from the towns immediately around Boston; they were accompanied by a few Indians from Natick and Punckapoag. Thomas Prentice was appointed captain of the special troop 24 June 1675. [3] Included was a company of infantry from Boston, made up from the regular military companies of the town. A third company consisted of "volunteers," seafaring men and strangers, with a number of prisoners who had been convicted of piracy and condemned to death, but were now released to engage in fighting the Indians. Capt. Daniel Henchman commanded the first company, Capt. Thomas Prentice the troopers, and Capt. Samuel Mosely the "volunteers." These three companies marched out of Boston on the 26th and 27th of June and arrived in Swansy on the 28th. [3]

The following was recorded in the Massachusetts Archives, and describes an interesting account of the action in which Stephen participated during the Mount Hope campaign.

". . . On arriving at Swansey, at Miles' garrison, the Indians began firing from the bushes across the river at our guards, and twelve of the troopers volunteered to go over the bridge and drive them off. These were commanded by Quartermaster Joseph Belcher and Corporal John Gill. As they advanced across the bridge the Indians fired upon them and wounded Mr. Belcher in the knee, killed his horse, and shot Gill in the breast, but his buff coat and several thicknesses of paper saved him from injury, but forced a withdrawal. On the renewal of the attack by the Indians next morning, the troopers, supported by Mosely's 'volunteers,' charged across the bridge and drove the Indians from the 'neck' and across the Pocasset. June 30th was spent by the army traversing Mount Hope neck, and at evening, Captain Prentice with his troops rode to Rehoboth and quartered over night. On the morning of July lst he divided the troop, sending one division back under command of Lieutenant Edward Oakes. It is not certain whether both divisions rode back by the same route, but it would seem so from the results. The captain's division came upon the Indians burning a house, but could not get at them on account of several fences which had to be torn down, giving the Indians time to retreat to a swamp. Lieutenant Oakes's force, however, discovered them from a more advantageous quarter, and chasing them over a plain killed two

> of Philip's chief men, but in the fight lost one of their own men. The next few days Captain Prentice and his troops spent in search of swamps, and then went with the army to Narraganset." [3]

Bodge next relates that after the return to Swansey and the news that Philip was trapped in the Pocasset Swamp, when the main body of the Massachusetts troops was sent back to Boston, Captain Prentice and his troops were ordered to scout towards Mendon, where the Indians had lately made an assault upon the people, killing several. The troopers met Captain Johnson's company at Mendon, as will appear from the following minutes of the Council. [3]

> July 26th 1675 Council Meeting:
>
> "The Council on perusing of ye letter of Capt. Prentice & Capt. Johnson, dated July 23d 1675, judged it meet to order that Capt. Prentice & his Troopers be presently called home & yt Capt. Johnson with his souldiers be also sent to Returne leaving . . . of his foot souldiers the Scouts (?) to remayne as a Guard to Mendon and . . . of his foote at Wrentham as their Guard Referring it to the sayd Captaine to consult with the Sarjant or other chiefe Officers of each Towne how many to leave at each Towne with their Armes . . . ? Remayne till further order." (The letter referred to is now lost from the files.)

The following is an abbreviated version of the roster of troopers credited with service under Captain Prentice during the Mount Hope Campaign: [5] [6]

August 27th 1675	pd.	s	d
John Needham	02	00	00
Jonathan Fairbank	01	18	06
Samuel Pollard	01	18	06
Fathergon Dinely	02	03	00
William Brooks	02	03	00
Jabes Jackson	02	08	06
Samuel Culliver	02	03	00
John Livermore	02	08	06
William Brown	02	03	00
Joseph Parmiter	02	04	03
Thomas Goble	02	08	06
James Miller	02	08	06
Benjamin Scott	02	02	06
Nathaniel Howard	01	13	00
STEPHEN PAINE	02	08	06
John Gill, Corp.	02	11	00
Nehamiah Hayden	01	07	00
Joseph Belcher, Qu. Mr.	02	01	00
September 16th			
James Indian	02	04	08
Thomas Indian	02	04	08
September 21st			
Edward Oakes, Lieut.	05	00	00
Thomas Oliver	01	01	06
John Clark	02	03	00
Felix Indian	01	00	06
Benjamin Ahaton	00	10	00
Harry Indian	01	00	06

John Adams	01	00	00
Jeremie Indian	01	00	06
Zachary Phillips	02	10	00
Caleb Carter	01	12	00
Abraham Skinner	01	08	06
John Druse	00	11	06
Matthew Bridge Qt. Mr.	03	13	00

Stephen Paine (Gen. VII, No. 34) again appears on the rolls as of 24 June 1676, while under the command of Lieutenant Edward Oakes. The service for which the following credits are given was probably rendered in the winter of 1675–76. From a letter of Rev. John Wilson, of Medfield, 14 February 1675–76, (6) it appears that Lieutenant Oakes was at Lancaster, Mass., after its destruction by the Indians February 10th, and was at the attack on 21 February. He was quartered there with his troop at Billerica, but date of service does not appear. (3)

March 24th 1675–6	pd	s	d
James Miller	01	12	10
John Gibson	01	12	10
Soloman Phips, Qr. Mr.	02	09	04
Thomas Creswell	01	12	10
April 24th 1676			
John Hastings	00	19	08
Anthony Ravinscroft	01	06	00
John Dunster	07	06	06
Stephen Cooledg	00	19	08
Samuel Whiting	00	19	08

June 24th 1676			
Thomas Peirce	00	19	08
Thomas Edmons	00	19	08
William Reade	00	19	08
Jonathan Bunker	01	12	10
STEPHEN PAINE	01	12	10
Thomas Henshaw	01	11	04
Stephen Richardson	01	12	10

From information obtained from Mr. Owen Della Luca, Archivist of the United First Parish Church (Unitarian) of Quincy, Mass., we learn that Stephen Paine, the son of the first immigrant, Moses (d. 1643), and Moses, himself, were both buried under a walk which ran beside the grave stones of Deacon Moses and his wife, Mary.

REFERENCES FOR THIS CHAPTER

1. Adams, C. F. *Three Episodes in Massachusetts History, Vol. II.* New York: Houghton, Mifflin Co. 1892. pp. 287, 594–595, 684–685, 713–714.

2. Bates, S. *Records of the Town of Braintree, Massachusetts, 1640–1793.* Maryland: Heritage Books, Inc., 1991. pp. 89–93, 160, 746.

3. Bodge, G. M. *Soldiers in King Philip's War.* Reprint from original. Mass.: 1906. Baltimore, Md.: Daniel Huxford, Printer, 1991. pp. 81, 85, 259–260.

4. *Boston News Letter*, 30 September 1742.

5. Drake. *History of Boston.*

6. *Massachusetts Archives*, Vol. 67, p. 226, Vol. 68, p. 134.

7. Paine, H.D. *Paine Family Records*, 1882–83. p. 191.

8. *Records of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company.* p. 168.

9. *Report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston, City Document, No. 59.* Boston: Rockwell and CHurchill, City Printers. 1891. p. 24.

10. *Society of Colonial Wars*, 1899–1902 p. 723.

11. Suffolk Probate, Vol. 60. pp. 420–421.

12. Suffolk Probate, Vol. 62. pp. 634, 638.

CHAPTER X

Stephen Paine (Gen. VIII, No. 36) and His Descendants

I have never thought that a Christian would be free of suffering, for our Lord suffered not to save us from suffering, but to teach us how to bear suffering. For he knew that there is no life without suffering.

—FROM ALAN PATON, *Cry, The Beloved Country*

STEPHEN PAINE (Gen. VIII, No. 36), b. 3 March 1653 at Braintree, Mass., d. 24 May 1690 at Braintree, Mass.; m. 20 February 1681 to Ellen Veasey (dau. of William Veasey), she b. 3 July 1652; m. by Capt. Richard Brackett.

Residence: Braintree, Massachusetts.
Admitted as a Freeman in 1678 [4]

GENERATION IX

Children of Stephen (Gen. VIII, No. 36) and Ellen (Veasey) Paine:

43. Stephen, (Gen. IX, No. 43) b. 7 November 1682, d. 24 May 1690, Braintree, Mass.

44. Ellen, (Gen. IX, No. 44) bap. 12 October 1684; m. Samuel Penniman by Mr. Moses Fiske, 14 May 1707, Braintree, Mass. Samuel d. 29 January 1717/18, Braintree, Mass.

    Children of Samuel and Ellen (Paine) Penniman:

    a. Hannah, b. 11 August 1708.

    b. Samuel, b. 24 February 1710.

    c. Bethiah, b. 17 March 1712.

    d. Ellinor, b. 1 January 1714.

    e. Abiel, b. 5 April 1718.

45. Samuel, (Gen. IX, No. 45) b. 1686, d. 13 February 1688, Braintree, Mass.

46. SAMUEL (Gen. IX, No. 46) bap. 14 April 1689, m. Susannah Ruggles, 5 November 1728 by E. Miller; liv. 1738, Braintree, Mass. Direct-line descendant. [4]

The Stephen Paine family's generation (VIII, No. 36), as with that of Nicholas Paine (Gen. V, No. 16) some seventy years before in England, must have endured great suffering, pain and disappointment, for the records of Stephen's family clearly and pointedly portrayed all the basic elements of despair so common in the brutal world of seventeenth century New England.

The high mortality rate which continued to claim so many lives was compounded by one disease after another that swept through many of New England's communities. Especially lethal among those diseases was smallpox, which claimed the lives of Stephen and his son in 1690, and perhaps others of the family, since cause of death was not recorded, but the time sequence of the records would indicate an epidemic took many Paine lives within a year's duration.

Funerals were an everyday fact of life, and the sorrows of the day must have been nearly unbearable. In a colony founded on and permeated with religion and Puritan beliefs, it seems strange that funerals included neither prayers nor sermons, since there were no examples of such in the Bible; nor were hearses employed, the coffin being carried to the burying ground on a shoulder bier. [3]

One of the most revealing texts illustrating the spirit of American Puritanism, is the Diary of Samuel Sewell—who was a businessman, civic leader and religious authority of the seventeenth century. Sewell was a graduate of Harvard, a man of wealth, a successful merchant, a deputy in the General Court, a jurist, and a captain of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company (at the time Moses Paine [Gen. VII, No. 33] and Stephen Paine [Gen. VII, No. 34], were

members). Judge Sewell was eminently qualified to throw a unique and intimate light upon the principal events of the town of Boston, and of Massachusetts in the last quarter of the seventeenth century.

One day we find Sewell arguing against the trade in slaves, the next relating the quarrels of Deputies and Magistrates, the next making an entry of the hanging of Quakers. He tells us that "John Holyday was placed in the pillory for counterfeiting", that the General court had named a day of fasting and humiliation because of the "afflictive sickness in many places", and he personalizes this for our family, when he writes in his diary: "Stephen Paine [Gen. VIII, No. 36], a devout Christian, a cunning artificer, an ingenious to admiration, died of smallpox May 24, 1690, aged 38 years." [5]

Since Judge Sewell's Christian beliefs were quite impassioned, we can assume that he must have felt Stephen possessed a strong Christian kinship to have referred to him in such a way.

Though Judge Sewell did not refer to Stephen's younger son, Stephen, it must be noted that he, too, died on the same day as his father.

Though we can observe great longevity in a few of our ancestors (when the records tell of some grandparent, uncle or aunt nearly completed a century), we actually find that half of those belonging to a family died before forty. Stephen Paine (Gen. VIII, No. 36) died at the age of thirty-eight, and his son, Samuel (Gen. IX, No 46), our next direct-line ancestor, died at forty-nine.

It was very common for fathers and mothers to die at an age between forty and fifty. Not only did smallpox make its periodic visit, killing both Stephen Sr. (Gen. VIII, No. 36) and his son, Stephen, Jr. (Gen. IX, No. 43), on 24 May 1690, but diphtheria also raged extensively. In 1751 more than one hundred and twenty died in neighboring Weymouth, out of a population of only twelve hundred. [1]

In 1761, an epidemic raged among the older inhabitants of Braintree, when seventeen died in one neighborhood. In 1775, during the excitement of the seige of Boston, a chronic dysentery prevailed to such an extent that three, four, and even five children were lost in single families. Mrs. John Adams, writing about this distressing time, could only say, "The dread upon the minds of the people of catching the distemper is almost as great as if it were the smallpox." [1]

Probably one of the greatest tragedies of the Paine family occurred in 1739. Samuel's (Gen. VIII, No. 37) son Samuel, married to Rachel Hayden, found his family caught in one of those periodic epidemics. The despairing account of the agony that followed was found in the Braintree records of that year:

> "Samuel Pain ye son of Samuel Pain junr and Rachel his wife Dyed June 20d 1739.
>
> Stephen Pain ye son of Samil Pain junr and Rachel his wife Dyed July 18th 1739.
>
> Rachel Pain ye daughter of Samil Pain junr and Rachel his wife Dyed July 18th 1739.
>
> Enoch Pain ye son of Samil Pain junr and Rachel his wife Dyed July 31th 1739.

> Nehemiah Pain ye son of Samil Pain junr and Rachel his wife Dyed August 31, 1739." [2]

The sadness that Samuel and his family felt must have been overpowering, but it was not over yet, for we find next:

> "Rachel Pain ye wife of Samil Pain junr dyed October 3d 1739." [2]

Within a year after the first Paines arrived in New England and settled in Braintree, Massachusetts, the Braintree Church had its beginning. The original Church Covenant of 16 September 1639, during the ministry of Mr. Henry Flynt, made note of the fact that "both males and females, solemnly renewed the Covenant of their Fathers, immediately before the participation of the Lord's Supper,"—that covenant under which "poor unworthy creatures, who have sometimes lived without Christ, and without God in the world . . . by the help and strength of Christ renounce the devil, the wicked world, a sinful flesh, with all the covenants of Anti-Christian pollution wherein sometimes we have walked, and all our former evil ways . . . and we give up ourselves also one to another by the will of God . . . and we also manifest our joint consent herein this day in presence of this assembly, by this our present public profession, and by giving to one another the right hand of fellowship." [1]

During the hundred years which ended on the 16th of September 1739, it is not too much to say that the church was the life center of the Paine family of Braintree for a number of generations, as it was with most families living there, and that it continued to "glow with a brighter, a more feverish heat than ever before . . ." [1]

During Mr. Flynt's tenure as pastor, extending over twenty-nine years, the church contained two hundred and four adult members. During the Fiske, March and Hancock pastorates, down to the close of the first century of church life in 1739, the number had increased to five hundred and fifty-eight. [1]

REFERENCES FOR THIS CHAPTER

1. Adams, Charles F., *Three Episodes of Massachusetts History*. New York: Houghton, Mifflin Co., 1892. pp. 748–749, 801.

2. Bates, Samuel A., *Records of the Town of Braintree, Massachusetts, 1640–1793*. Reprint, Heritage Books Inc. Bowie, Md., 1991. p. 732.

3. Linscott, Robert N., *Day By Day in a Colonial Town*. American Heritage, December, 1983, pp. 93–94.

4. Paine, H.D., *Paine Family Records, 1882–83*, pp. 166–167.

5. Wertenbaker, Thomas J. *The Puritan Oligarchy*. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1947. p. 92.

CHAPTER XI

Samuel Paine (Gen. IX, No. 46) and His Descendants

Not to know what happened before we were born is to remain perpetually a child. For what is the worth of a human life unless it is woven into the life of our ancestors?

—CICERO, Roman Statesman and Orator

SAMUEL PAINE (Gen. IX, No. 46), bap. 14 April 1689, at Braintree, Mass., d. after 1738 at Braintree, Mass.; m. 5 November 1728 to Susanna Ruggles, b. 19 November 1702; m. by E. Miller, at Braintree, Mass.

Residence: Braintree, Massachusetts.

Service: "He was a devout member and an ardent supporter of the Church of England in Braintree, now Quincy."

Samuel was a member of the Episcopal Church in Braintree.

Admitted as a freeman—Date Unknown.

GENERATION X

Children of Samuel (Gen. IX, No. 46) and Susanna (Ruggles) Paine.

47. Jacob, b. 18 August 1727, Braintree, Mass., m. Rachel_____.

    Child born to Jacob and Rachel Paine:

    a. Samuel, b. 18 November 1753.

48. Susannah, b. 16 October 1729, Braintree, Mass.

49. Eleanor, b. 23 March 1731, Braintree, Mass.

50. Joseph Ruggles, b. 3 December 1732; d. young, at Braintree, Mass.

51. JOSEPH RUGGLES, b. 30 June 1735; d.17 April 1822, Ashfield, Mass. Direct-line descendant.

52. Sarah, b. 12 November 1736; m. 1765 to Richard Newcomb.

    Children born to Richard and Sarah (Paine) Newcomb:

    a. Ebenezer, b. 27 February 176_.

    b. Sarah, b. 4 March 1765.

    c. Jonathan, b. 10 March 1770.

53. Ebenezer, b. 14 March 1738, d. 26 March 1739.

Samuel Payne (Gen. IX, No. 46) was the great-grandson of Moses Payne (Gen. VI, No. 28), and the third generation born in America. Born 14 April 1689, at Braintree, Mass., Samuel married Susannah Ruggles, 5 November 1728, and fortunately, because of the thoughtful, insightful or accidental preservation of the Braintree records, we can envision our family's participation at a time and in a world where only the hardiest in body and spirit could hope to survive.

As with his father and grandfather before him, Samuel's life seemed centered in the town of Braintree. Generally speaking, the men and women who left the cities and villages of England and who settled in Cambridge, Boston and Braintree, Mass., were unpretentious folk. Most read few books except the Old Testament. Their interest in politics at this time did not extend far beyond the limits of their own Suffolk County. The Braintree records of the years when Samuel was old enough to participate in the civic affairs of the community, have provided insight into the politics of one small village in Suffolk County.

When the townfolk heard the ringing of the bell or the cry of the watchman, Samuel and the other men of the town would proceed to the meeting-house, take their seats and at the order of the moderator proceed with business.

> "March 4th, 1722/3,
>
> The inhabitants of Braintree being lawfully assembled, chose John Quincey Esq. moderator for the day.

The moderator then put the question whether the Town would vote for a Town Clerk by written votes. It passed on the negative.

They then chose Joseph Parmenter clerk for ye year ensuing by lifting up their hands.

Then voted that both then & for the future there should be two Selectmen chose at each end of ye town and the fifth selectman to be either part as he should chose.

The Selectmen then chosen were:
Mr. Benjamin Webb
Capt. Peter Adams
Mr. Joseph Crosby
Lt. Samuel Allen
Mr. Jonathan Hayward

The constables then chosen were Nathan Bracket and Ebenezer White, but Nathan Bracket agreeing with his brother John Vesey and presenting him to the Town the Town accepted of said Vesey in said Brackits [sic] home.

The Town Treasurer then chosen was Mr. Peter Hobart.

Surveyors of Highways, were:

Lt. John Cleverly	Ensign Saml Baxter
David Bass	Thomas French
Daniel Hunt	Nathaniel Thayer

Tithingmen were:

Joseph Nightingal.	Saml. Savel senior
Richard Faxson	Joseph Allen

Fence Viewers were:

Moses Belcher	William Field
John Thayer Junior	Samuel Wild

Hogreeves were:	
Ezekiel Crane	Benjamin Neal Jr.
Ephraim Jones	John Thayer son of Jno. Thayer.
Sealer of Leather was	John Adams
Sealer of Weights & Measures,	Mr. Samuel Payne

The Town then chose a committee to Runn the Line between the Towns common Lands and ye Land of ye Purchasers.

The committee was Mr. Dependance French, Mr. Joseph Adams and Mr. John Baxter.

Voted, that Deacon Moses Payne [Gen. VIII, No. 40, married to Mary Pierce] and Deacon Peter Hobart, should have for their serving ye Town as Town Treasurers for year past forty shillings.

Then voted that whosever shall enter a good sufficient Bull not under Two years old with ye town clerk any time between the present month march & May next, the said Bull to be kept in a pasture for the Towns use only, the whole year shall receive Twenty shillings out of ye Town Treasury, provided they shall not exceed the number of seven, one of said seven to Run at large . . ." [2]

A week later,

"March the 11th 1722/3

The inhabitants of Braintree Lawfully Assembled then chose John Quincey Esq. moderator for the day.

> Then voted that swine shall go at large during ye continuance of ye last Act Relating to Swine.

The Moderator then moved the Question to the Town whether they would chuse a Committee to treat with Nathaniel Hubbard Esqr. and lay before him ye charges that have been laid out about the Bridge at Menatiquod River and all the areers that his father & he should have paid until the time that he sold, and to demand and receive it of him, it passed in the affirmative.

> "Then voted that Mr. Samuel Payne, Mr. Samuel White and Lt. Samuel Allen be a Committee for that affair." [2]

Samuel's participation in further town affairs is noted on 2 March 1723/4, when he was chosen to serve once again as 'Sealer of weights and measures'. In addition, his services were again requested when it was:

"Voted, That the Town would choose a Committee to Treat with Nathaniel Hubart Esqr. or any other person concerned about the premises, who shall make Returne of their doings therein to the Town at the next Town meeting.

"Then voted That Mr. Stephen Payne senior Mr. Gregory Belcher senior and Mr. Ephraim Thayer senior should be a Committee for yt affair." [2]

The solemn importance of planting crops and the destructive nature of birds and animals is reflected in the minutes of many Braintree town meetings. Encouragement was given in

the form of bounties that were placed on the heads of blackbirds and squirrels.

> " . . . then voted that whosoever should kill any grown blackbirds between this 7th Day of March, and the last day of May, next ensuing should have Three pence per head, and for all young ones in said Time half penny per head.
>
> "Voted that from the last Day of May (aforesaid) to the last Day of November next, who ever shall kill said birds shall have penny per head.
>
> "Voted, that whosoever should kill any ground squirrels from the first Day of April to the last Day of June said birds shall have penny per head.
>
> "Voted, that the heads of said Birds, and squirrels, be brought in to any of the selectmen, or constables of said Town." [2]

It was the duty of the annually elected constable to collect all taxes. That office, therefore, was avoided; for not only did it entail much work, but, until after the year 1740, the post remained an unpaid office. It was looked upon as a public duty to be performed by everyone in turn. Nor was this all, for under the law as it then stood, the constable had to account for the taxes included in the levy which he had failed to collect, as well as for those he actually received.

So much was the office detested that as early as 1710, "The meeting-house bell being cracked," one Daniel Legaree offered to mend it "upon condition of his being freed from being chose

a Constable"; and the precinct accepted the offer, providing that "if anything should happen whereby the bell should be melted or broken, Legaree will return the same weight of the same metal that he receives." At the March town-meeting of 1761, John Adams says, "When I had no suspicion, I heard my name pronounced in a nomination of surveyors of highways. I was very wrong, because I knew no better, but said nothing. My friend, Dr. Savil, came to me and told me that he had nominated me to prevent me from being nominated as constable. 'For,' said the doctor, 'they make it a rule to compel every man to serve either as constable or surveyor, or to pay a fine.'" [1]

At a meeting on 17 May 1725, " . . . then Samuel Payne was chosen Constable but he refused to serve and Promised to pay his fine." On 17 March 1735/6, " . . . Samuel Ruggles paid five pounds; Constables Moses Payne paid five pounds; Joseph Neal paid five pounds; Peter Adams paid five pounds. They then proceeded to chuse Constables, and Samuel Ruggles and David Hollbrook, having declared their refusal, votes for Two Constables were called for, which being brought in & collected, it appeared that Moses Pain Junr and George Chessman were chosen, but Moses Pain immediately declared his refusal and paid the penalty, being five pounds. The meeting then proceeded to the choice of one Constable, and the votes being brought in and examined, it appeared Joseph Neal Tertius was chosen. But he forthwith declared his refusal & paid the penalty.

"Next they proceeded to vote for a Constable, and the votes being brought in, it appeared that Peter Adams Junr was

chosen, but he declared his refusal, they proceeded and chose Ebenezer Field who declared his acceptance." [2]

Perhaps Ebenezer did not have the five-pound fine or he decided the meeting business must proceed. Obviously, however, the office of Constable was not a very popular one for the inhabitants of Braintree, including members of the Payne family.

Samuel died sometime after 1738, at Braintree, Mass. We have no further record of his mortal existence after this date. Although we have no way of knowing for certain, we can presume that he was buried in the Episcopal Church cemetery, since he was a member of that church at the time of his death.

REFERENCES FOR THIS CHAPTER

1. Adams, Charles F. *Three Episodes of Mass. History*, Houghton, Mifflin Co. New York. 1892.

2. Bates, Samuel A. *Records of the Town of Braintree, Mass., 1640–1793*, reprint, Heritage Books, Inc., Bowie, Md. 1991, pp. 108, 109, 113, 117, 131.

CHAPTER XII

Joseph Ruggles Paine (Gen. X, No. 51) and His Descendants

"These are the times that try men's souls. The summer soldier and the sunshine Patriot will, in this crisis, shrink from the service of their country; but he that stands it now, deserves the love and thanks of man and woman . . . the harder the conflict the more glorious the triumph."

—THOMAS PAINE, 19 Dec. 1776, *Pennsylvania Journal*

JOSEPH RUGGLES PAINE (Gen. X, No. 51), b. 30 June 1735, Braintree, Massachusetts; d. 17 April 1822, Ashfield, Massachusetts, bur. Baptist Corner Cemetary, Ashfield, Massachusetts; m. Mehitable Gittings, 13 March 1758, Braintree, Mass. She was b. Conway, Mass. abt. 1746; d. 18 February 1831, bur. Baptist Corner Cemetary, Ashfield, Massachusetts.

Residence: Braintree, Mass. Ashfield, Mass.

Service: Served on board the armed ship, King George, 1758, at the age of twenty-two.

Enlisted in the Regiment under the direct command of Col. Banjamin Lincoln, commanded by Gen. Jeffrey Amhurst, for the invasion of Canada, 23 March 1759.

Served as a private in Capt. Benjamin Phillip's Company, Col. Elisha Porter's (Hampshire County) Regiment; enlisted 10 July 1777. [4]

GENERATION XI

Children of Joseph Ruggles (Gen. X, No. 51) and Mehitable (Gittings) Paine:

54. JOSEPH (Gen. XI, No. 54), b. 1762, Ashfield, Mass.; d. 10 April 1850, Stockton, New York; m. Anna Billings of Conway, Mass. 1 November 1792. (5) Direct-line descendant.

55. Mehitable (Gen. XI, No. 55), b. 1763, Ashfield, Mass.; m. Charles Hudson 4 Nov. 1779.

56. Asa (Gen. XI, No. 56), b. abt. 1770; m. Hannah Look of Conway, Mass. 29 January 1799.

57. Elener [sic] (Gen. XI, No. 57), m. Jeremiah Look.

58. Samuel (Gen. XI, No. 58), m. Susanna Look of Conway, Mass. September 1795.

59. Susanna (Gen. XI, No. 59), m. Benjamin Sables.

60. Unknown.

61. Unknown.

Following extensive searching of the records, we still could not locate the names of Joseph Ruggles' and Mehitable's other two children. In the 1790 census, we did locate the following information as it related to the family:

Two children over 16 years of age.
Three males under 16 years of age.
Three females under 16 years of age.

This made a total of eight children born to Joseph and Mehitable . . . two daughters and six sons. (5) We believe that all of their children were born in Ashfield, Mass., probably in the 1760's and '70's.

Joseph Ruggles Paine (Gen. X, No. 51), of Braintree, Mass., was twenty years old in May of 1756 when war between Great Britain and France was formally declared. It was during the administration of William Pitt, and Massachusetts resounded with warlike preparation as expedition after expedition went out.

Still, through all of the turmoil, Braintree seemed to have maintained its even flow of day to day life. In the Braintree Town Records, we find no trace of famous events. The usual town meetings were held, but even less than the usual interest seemed to have been attached to them. Questions of "Commons" management were discussed; fines were imposed or remitted; schools were provided for; and from sixty to one-hundred fifty pounds were annually ordered to be levied to meet current expenses; but the stress of the war in the calls for men, supplies and money did not seem to make the town records. Yet, these must have come and been felt quite severely, since an analysis of the muster rolls shows that between 1756 and 1760, more than two hundred Braintree men did perform military service. Some were forced into service, but the greatest number volunteered.

In the muster rolls of the *Old French War*, a part of the *Massachusetts Archives*, we find the following:

"Peter Thayer was Captain, John White, Lieut., Joseph Hayward, Ensign, Moses Bracket and Seth Turner, Sergts., and Richard Faxon, Jr., Corporal, Richard Thayer, Jun., Elijah Thayer [son of Jo. Thayer], Samuel French [son of Benjamin French], Adam French, John Hollis, Ephraim Hunt, Junr., Joshua French, Nehemiah French, and many others, all of

Braintree, privates, in a company belonging to the Regiment of Col. Benjamin Lincoln, that marched on the alarm for the relief of Fort Wm. Henry, in August, 1757. They marched only to Roxbury and back.

"The following persons, belonging to Braintree, enlisted in the Regiment commanded by Col. Benjamin Lincoln, to be under command of Gen. Jeffrey Amhurst, for the invasion of Canada. Most of them had been in service before. Their previous military or naval service is noted immediately after their respective ages.*

Jonathan Green,	aged 26, at Lake George 1758, enlisted March 29, 1759.
Benjamin Baxter,	aged 30, at Lake George 1755, enlisted March 23, 1759.
Samuel Hayward,	aged 21, in the ship, 1758, enlisted March 30, 1759.
Joseph Bracket,	aged 41, agt. Canada, 1758, enlisted March 23, 1759.
Jonathan Tant,	aged 22, Lake George, 1757, enlisted March 27, 1759.
Thomas Cleaverly,	aged 21, in the ship, 1758, enlisted April 4, 1759.
JOSEPH RUGGLES PAINE	aged 22, in the ship, 1758, enlisted March 23, 1759.

* "In the ship," means that they served on board the armed ship, *King George*, Benjamin Hallowell, Junr. Commander, equipped by the Province, to guard the coasts.

Josiah Sanders,	aged 19, in the ship, 1758, enlisted March 23, 1759.
Winter Basson,	aged 26, Fontunac, 1758, enlisted April 2, 1759.
William Hobart,	aged 19, Lake George, 1758, enlisted April 2, 1759.
James More,	aged 22, Lake George, 1758, enlisted April 3, 1759.
David Horton,	aged 26, Lake George, 1757, enlisted March 3l, 1759.
John Niles,	aged 18, Lake George, 1758, enlisted April 2, 1759.
Stephen Paine	aged 28, Lake George, 1758, enlisted April 2, 1759.

(This Stephen is not in the direct-line of our family tree.) [Born 1730]

William Curtis,	aged 42, Lake George, 1756, enlisted April 2, 1759.
Melatiah Stephen,	aged 17, Lake George, 1758, enlisted April 2, 1759.
John Tower,	aged 41, Fontanac, 1758, enlisted April 2, 1759.
John Noyce,	aged 45, Fontanac, 1758, enlisted April 3, 1759.

The following is immediately added:

"To the Hon. Will Brattle, Esqr., Adjutant Genl. &c.

Hingham, April 11, 1758. Pursuant to my warrant from the Captain Genl. to Inlist or Impress 132 men out of the Third Regiment in the Couty of Suffolk, I here return the names of 129 men Inlisted, Recd. their Bounty, and have had read to them 2d and 6th Sexsion of the articals of war, and taken the oath of fidelity. I have a Recipt from Capn. Jotham Gay of l28 men deliver'd him or his order. I have returned Two men only imprest. So that their is but one man wanting 23 the Capn. is ordered Immediately to Impress for the service.

I am yr. Honr. Humble St.
Benj. Lincoln" [6]

In 1758, in response to the strong, personal appeal of William Pitt, Massachusetts put forth what was considered to be a maximum effort. A call for seven thousand men was ordered. Only forty-five hundred could be raised by voluntary enlistment, and the remainder had to be drafted. They composed part of the force intended to operate against Ticonderoga. In it were at least thirty men from Braintree; and during this time twelve more enlisted on the ship, *King George*. Joseph Ruggles Paine (Gen. X, No. 51) was one of the twelve who had naval service. [4]

As noted above, Joseph Ruggles, on 23 March 1759, enlisted in Col. Lincoln's regiment. While Wolfe with his regiment moved against Quebec, a provisional group relieved the garrison at Nova Scotia. To this force Braintree contributed a quota

of some forty men, while more took part in the operations under Amherst, which resulted in the fall of Ticonderoga and Crown Point. Joseph Ruggles was in a company commanded by Captain Jabez Snow. [2]

The term of enlistment during this war was short, and the name of the same man often appears more than once on the rolls. But, during those three years it is probably safe to say that Braintree furnished one hundred different men for actual service. The population of the town was then about two thousand, of whom some five hundred were males over sixteen. From this it would appear that at least one townsman in five who during the war was capable of bearing arms was actually assigned field duty. [1]

Somewhere in his travels, Joseph Ruggles met Mehitable Gittings, from Conway, Mass. They were married 13 March 1758, probably between his service on the naval ship *King George* and his enlistment in Col. Benjamin Lincoln's Regiment on 23 March 1759.

Records indicate the couple were married in Braintree before moving to Ashfield, Mass. where Joseph (Gen. XI, No. 54) was born in 1762.

The town records show that Braintree Resident Joseph Ruggles was tapped on 1 March 1762, to be a "hogreeve" during the ensuing year. It was certainly not a very romantic position, but a necessary one, nonetheless. Hogs were an endless source of annoyance, breaking out of their pens and wandering into the neighbors' gardens, while seeking to satisfy their insatiable appetites. It was the hogreeve's job to locate and remove stray swine.

After further examination of the Braintree records, we can assume Joseph and Mehitable moved to Ashfield before the end of March 1762, since only one person was chosen as a hogreeve, a Thomas Allen, on 29 March 1762. (2) Since at least two men were usually chosen for this job, we might conclude that Allen's selection was made to replace Joseph Ruggles, who had probably moved to Ashfield at about this time.

As stated previously, Joseph Ruggles and Mehitable Paine had six sons and two daughters. We know that one son, probably their first, was named Joseph (Gen. XI, No. 54), born in 1762, in Ashfield, Mass. (Ashfield is in the southwestern part of what is now Franklin County, Mass. It is a neighboring town of Conway, where Mehitable was born.)

Early Ashfield had experienced as disturbing—if not as sad and memorable—a history as many of its neighbors. More than once it was abandoned through the fear of Indian massacres, and more than once re-occupied. By 1765, it had finally become incorporated as a town.

It was not an especially fertile area where Joseph Ruggles and Mehitable decided to settle. That region features a very hilly topography, with deep valleys more fit for grazing than cultivation of crops. In one of the almost inaccessible and quite isolated portions of Ashfield, near a small settlement now called "Baptist Corners", Joseph Ruggles and Mehitable made their home. The small cluster of houses took its name from the Baptist Church nearby, whose site is indicated by a granite boulder bearing a tablet with this legend, "First Baptist Church, built 1775, removed 1831."

It is interesting to note that adjoining the Paine home was the home of Mary Lyon, the founder of Mount Holyoke seminary. And, nearby, is a small graveyard which Peggy and I visited.

Of the family life of this couple on their Ashfield farm, little is known during the next fifteen years.

At the age of forty-two, on 10 July 1777, Joseph Ruggles again answered his country's call when he enlisted as a private in Captain Benjamin Phillip's Company, Col. Elisha Porter's (Hampshire County) regiment, Northern Department. He was discharged 4 August 1777, after serving thirty days, including travel (100 miles) home. [3]

Joseph Ruggles was buried in the Baptist Corner Cemetery 17 April 1822. He left no will. The only tangible document we were able to locate was a property deed granted to his son, Joseph (Gen. XI, No 54). A copy of the deed is included at the end of this chapter.

On 11 May 1992, Peggy and I drove from York, Pennsylvania, to Ashfield, Massachusetts, the home of Joseph Ruggles Paine (Gen. X, No. 51) and the location of the cemetery where he and his wife, Mehitable, are buried.

We arrived in the late afternoon in time to find the Ashfield Town Hall, which has quite a history, itself. We met briefly with the town clerk, who provided us with a map locating the Baptist Corner Cemetery. It was apparent, after looking at the map, that we might have some difficulty locating the cemetery—since there are seven of them in the Ashfield area!

About four miles from town, on a very narrow and windy road, we finally located the old Baptist Corner Cemetery. After talking about it for so long, it was really exciting to finally be there.

The cemetery is bordered by the typical old New England stone fence. It was a beautiful, sunny, cool day, and to see the western sunlight casting shadows on the old gray stone markers and moss that covered the ground was indeed a fascinating sight. The problem now was locating Joseph Ruggles' grave and being able to read any marking on such an old stone.

The cemetery is quite small—an area of about 50'x50'. After a brief search, Peggy called to me, saying she had located the marker next to the stone fence on the northwestern end. Indeed, there it was, the grave of Joseph Ruggles Paine, and next to it was a smaller stone marking the grave of his wife, Mehitable! A small American flag stood in a holder by Joseph's marker. (I assume a veterans group was looking after the graves of those who had served in the days of our country's early formation.) It was a good feeling to know that this wasn't just another unmarked and unrecognized gravestone. It read, "Joseph R. Paine, died April 17, 1822, aged 88 years." Mehitable's read, "Mehitable, wife of Joseph R. Paine, died February 18, 1831."

To the left, and along the rear of the plot, were stones marking the graves of other Paines. We were quite pleased to find that all of them were fairly readable. As can be seen in the photo, three of the graves contained children of Zebulon Payne and his wife, "A. P." (Anna Bigelow Paine). It is interesting to note the difference in the spelling of Payne, with Zebulon listed as "Payne" and his children as "Paine". The fourth grave

marker has a rounded top and three letters, "J.R.P." We were unable to locate information on any of these four children.

On the grave next to Mehitable's is a small stone identifying the grave of Benjamin Paine, who died March 8, 1831 at the age of fifty-seven. His relationship is not clear to us as yet. He was born in 1774, when Joseph Ruggles was thirty-nine. He could possibly have been a son, but we are not certain.

Next to Benjamin's grave is another stone, somewhat larger, identifying the grave of Zebulon Payne, who died at the age of fifty-seven, on October 1, 1859. An interesting detail is the spelling of the family name on his stone as "Payne", instead of the more usual "Paine" of the time. As with Benjamin, we are not sure of his relationship to us, either. Zebulon was born in 1802 when Joseph was sixty-eight. Perhaps this intriguing puzzle can be solved with further research. As I have said, the answers are out there somewhere.

Returning to the four smaller graves at the rear of the plot, we found three of them identified as follows, from left to right:

WASHINGTON	LUCINA	SARAH	J.R.P.
son of	dau of	dau of	
Z.P. & A.P.	Z.P. & A.P.	Z.P. & A.P.	
Died	Died	Died	
Nov. 8, 1822	Feb. 14, 1844	—	

As previously noted, the grave next to Sarah's was marked simply "J.R.P."—nothing else was on the stone. Was this a son of Joseph Ruggles? Without adequate records, we can't be sure.

Graves of Joseph Ruggles Paine, Mehitable (Gittings) Paine, and four small graves of unknown Paine children in the small, Baptist Corner Cemetery, Ashfield, Mass.

As you can see, we took several pictures to preserve the record of the various graves, but we left Ashfield with many more questions than when we arrived. Though we were able to hypothesize the names of six of Jospeh Ruggles' and Mehitable's other children from the Ashfield town records, Peggy and I have concluded that further research will be necessary. Fortunately, we were able verify the name of JOSEPH (Gen. XI, No. 54), our direct-line descendant.

On 12 September 1791, Joseph Ruggles sold a portion of his estate to his son Joseph. What follows is a copy of this agreement. Though the original was difficult to read, and transposing resulted in some fragmentation, I felt the document was important enough to include in this generation's history.

> "Know all men by these presents that I Joseph R Payn of Ashfield in the county of Hampshire and state of Massachusetts. For and in consideration of the sum of sixty pounds to be . . . to my son Joseph Payn as his portion out of my estate. Have given granted and bargained and . . . conveyed and confirmed and by these presence do freely and clearly and absolutely give grant, bargain sell convey and confirm unto him the said Joseph Payn his heir and assign forever, A certain tract of land lying in Ashfield. Bounded as follows, east on the highway, north on Nathan Lyon, west on Levi Street and Isaac Cridington, south on Silvester Phillips, containing forty acres be at . . . Reserving myself the barn and one acre of land

where the barn now stands. To have and to hold the . . . granted premises with the . . . and pr . . . then belonging to him the said Joseph Payn his heirs and assign to his . . . own proper use benefit and . . . and I the said Joseph Payn for myself and heirs . . . and administrators do covenant promise and grant unto and with the said Joseph Payn his heirs and assign forev er, that before and . . . the . . . hear of I am the lawful owner of the before granted premises and have in myself full power to give grant bargain sell and convey the same as afore said and that clear from all incumbrances whatsoever, and that I will warrant and defend the same against the lawful claims or demands of any person or persons whatsoever . . . whereof I do sit my Hand and seal this 12 day of September in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and ninety one.

Signed sealed and delivered . . . Joseph Ruggles Payn in presence of us Ebenesar Smith

Edward Annible. Joseph Ruggles Payne

Mehitable Paine

Hampshire ss March 5 1798

personally appeared Joseph Ruggles Pain signed to the instrument and acknowledged the same to he his free . . . and died Before me.

Ephraim Williams, Justice of the Peace.

71

Know al men by these presents that I Joseph R. Payn of Ashfield in the county of Hampshire and state of Massachusetts. For and in consideration of the sum of sixty Pounds to be received to my son Joseph Payn as his portion out of my estate, have given granted and bargained and aliened released conveyed and confirmed and by these presence do freely and clearly and absolutely give grant, bargain sell alien release convey and confirm unto him the said Joseph Payn his heirs and assigns forever, A certain tract of land lying in Ashfield. Bounded as follows, east on the highway, north on Nathan Lyon, West on Levi Steel and Isaac Cridington, south on Silvester Phillips, containing forty acres be it more or less. Reserving to myself the barn and one acre of land where the barn now stands. To have and to hold the before granted premises with the apurtenances and privileges then belonging to him the said Joseph Payn his heirs and assigns, to his their own proper use benefit and behoof forever more, and I the said Joseph R. Payn for myself and heirs executors and administrators do covenant promise and grant unto and with the said Joseph Payn his heirs and assigns forever, that before and untill the sealing hear of I am the lawful owner of the before granted premises and have in myself full power to give grant bargain sell and convey the same as aforesaid and that clear from all incumbrances what soever, and that I will warrant and defend the same against the lawful claims or demands of any person or persons whatsoever. In witness whereof I do set my Hand and seal this 12. day of September in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and ninety one

Signed sealed and delivered in presence of us Ebenezer Smith, Edward Annible

Joseph Ruggles Payn & seal
Mehitable Paine on seal
Hampshire SS. March 5 1798. personally appeared Joseph Ruggles Paine signer to the within instrument and acknowledged the same to be his free act and deed Before me.
Ephraim Williams Justice of the Peace

The foregoing is a true copy of the Original Rec'd Nov 5. 1829
Recorded & Compared By H. Leavitt, Regt.

A 12 September 1791 sales agreement for the transfer of property from Joseph Ruggles to his son, Joseph, of Ashfield, Mass.

The forgoing is a true copy of the Original re'cd November 5, 1829.

Recorded and copied by H. Seauitt, (Regt)"

REFERENCES FOR THIS CHAPTER

1. Adams, Charles F. *Three Episodes of Mass. History, Vol. II.* New York: Houghton, Mifflin Co. 1892. pp. 836–837.

2. Bates, Samuel A. *Records of the Town of Braintree, Mass., 1640–1793*, reprint, 1991, Heritage Books, Bowie, Md. p. 384.

3. *Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War.* 1903. Wright and Potter Printing Company, Boston, Mass. p. 788.

4. *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol. 15. pp. 51–52.

5. Paine, Henry Clay, A Life, 1907, Burdick and Allen, Printers, Milwaukee, WI. p. 2.

6. *Revolutionary War Archives, XXII*, 37.

CHAPTER XIII

Joseph Payne (Gen. XI, No. 54) and His Descendants

"The people of New England
of good old Pilgrim stock,
they reared the church and schoolhouse
Amid o'er her barren hilltops,
Her mountains and her glens,
Where the land was poor and sterile,
They raised the best of men."

—LUCIUS BUMP

Character! When Lucius Bump wrote this poem to be read before the "Ladies Sewing Society" of Stockton, New York, in 1857, he became one of the first in a long line of writers who would passionately celebrate the rock-solid integrity of the "New England character"—the tenacity and the reverent piety that allowed America's first settlers and their offspring to endure and flourish.

How important were these New England roots? A quick look at the census figures of Bump's day shows that in the year of

his poem, 1,750 of Stockton's 1,789 residents could claim direct descent from the flinty settlers who had formed the "New England Parentage". [1]

That parentage, of course, had earned its reputation for courage and endurance over several generations . . . valiant generations that reached all the way back to the 17th Century, when the first Paines fought their way to Boston Harbor and began to build the New World of America.

JOSEPH PAYNE (Gen. XI, No. 54), b. 1762, Ashfield, Franklin County, Mass.; d. 10 April 1850, Stockton, Chautauqua County, New York; m. Anna Billings, 1 November 1792, (Ashfield Town Records) Ashfield, Mass.; she was b. 1772 in Connecticut; also lived in Conway, Franklin County, Mass. Anna d. 17 December 1860, Stockton, N.Y. She and Joseph bur. Greenwood Cemetery, Stockton, New York. [4]

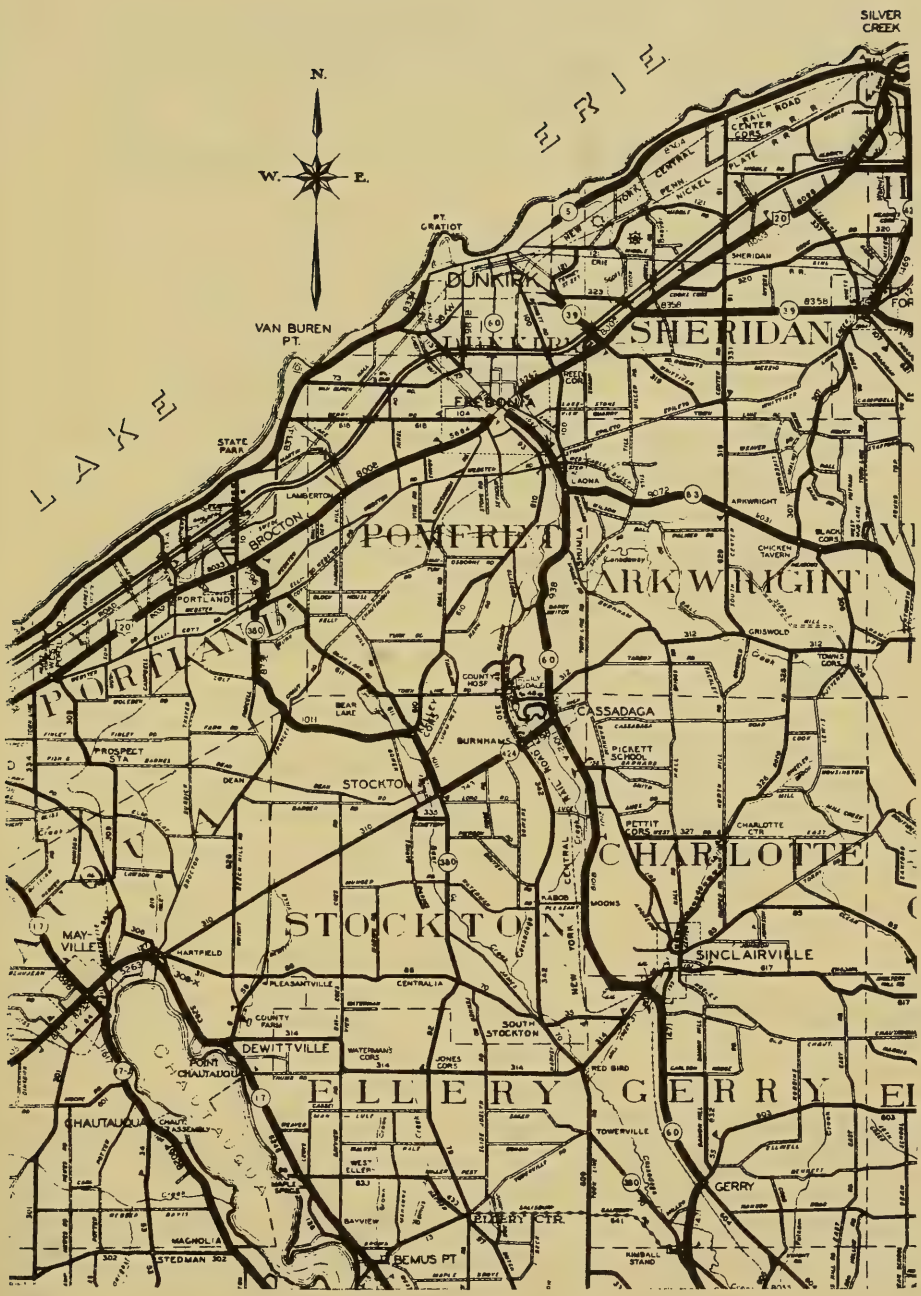
Residence: Ashfield, Franklin Co. Mass., Jamestown, Chautauqua Co. N.Y., Stockton, Chautauqua Co. N.Y.

GENERATION XII

Children of Joseph (Gen. XI, No. 54) and Anna (Billings) Payne:

62. Joseph Jr. (Gen. XII, No. 62), b._____, Ashfield, Mass.; d. _____, Stockton, N.Y.

63. Samuel (Gen. XII, No. 63), b. 18 February 1795, Ashfield, Mass.; d. 10 April 1850, Stockton, N.Y.; bur. Greenwood Cemetery, Stockton, N.Y.; m. Laura Elmer, b. 18 February 1800; d. 1859. Samuel was Grantee of



Map of Chautauqua County, N.Y.

land in Stockton in 1848, from Charles Cooper [Lib. 45–4] [11–4–12], and another transaction was made in 1850 from Elisha Beckwith [Lib. 49–47] [35–6–12]. (3)

Records indicate Samuel and Laura had six children:

a. Orrin Pierre, b. 22 May 1820; d. 20 December 1886; bur. Cassadaga Cemetery, no grave marker. Was a blacksmith and horse dealer; m. 1/w Eliza Etta Ames; (4) 2/w Lucina Putnam, 26 June 1870; she b. 1837, d. 1911.

The home of Orrin was not at Baptist Corners, but in Ashfield village, also called Ashfield Plain, and colloquially "Shirkshire". The house was described as "a two-story frame cottage, with ample porch in front, gambrel roof and dormer windows, sheltered with abundant trees and having a road leading along behind to a cozy barn." (3) Here Orrin brought his wife Eliza Etta Ames, whom he married 13 November 1842. She was the daughter of Samuel and Amarylis (Mallory) Ames and was born in Stockton, New York, 22 June 1826. (3)

Orrin Pierre and Eliza had four children:

i. Henry Clay, b. 26 November 1843. d._____

"Henry Clay Payne was one of the early members of the Society of Colonial Wars for the State of Wisconsin, claiming membership by virtue of his descent from Mr. Moses Pain of Braintree and from the latter's son, Stephen Pain. From 1902 until his death Mr. Payne was the Deputy Governor General of the Society. No one who attended the dinner given by that

Society on December 21, 1901, will forget the feeling and eloquent address of Mr. Payne to his fellow members. A residence soon to begin in Washington was deeply impressing upon his mind the urgent need of a disinterested and heaven-inspired patriotism.

"On December 16, 1900, Mr. Payne was elected a member of the executive committee of the Indianapolis Monetary Convention.

"He was likewise the original trustee for Wisconsin of the McKinley National Memorial Assoc., which position he still held at the time of his death.

"For the artistic betterment of the city of his love Mr. Payne presented to it the eight stone lions which now ornament the approaches to the two bridges over the Light House Ravine in Lake Park, Milwaukee. It is not amiss to emphasize in this connection that Mr. Payne was a constant and generous giver. All objects aiming at the advancement and improvement of Milwaukee, all public benevolent institutions, and churches of any faith, were granted his liberal benefactions." [3]

ii. Imogene, b. 21 September 1845.

iii. Frederick Wells, b. 26 August 1847.

iv. Mary Eliza, b. 7 April 1851, d. young.

b. George, b. 1827; Conway, Mass.; d._____, Stockton, N.Y. Occ., Salesman. Still living in 1870.

c. Charles S., b. 22 July 1832, Conway, Mass.; d._____.

d. Orville, b. 1836, Conway, Mass.; d._____.

ADDENDUM
166-a

PAYNE, HENRY CLAY (Nov. 23, 1843 - Oct. 4, 1904), railroad executive, businessman, politician, U.S. Postmaster general, b. Ashfield, Mass. He graduated from Shelburne Falls (Mass.) Academy in 1859. In 1863 he moved to Wisconsin, settling in Milwaukee, where for a time he worked as a cashier in a dry goods store. In 1867 he began his career in the insurance business, achieved considerable success, and soon became active in local Republican politics. In 1876 he was appointed postmaster of Milwaukee by President U.S. Grant, serving in this capacity until the Democrats gained control of the national administration in 1885. After being relieved of his duties as postmaster, Payne resumed his business pursuits and became prominent in the development of local public utilities. He was vice-president of the Wisconsin Telephone Co. (1886-1889), president (1889-1899), and in 1890 became vice-president of the Milwaukee Street Railway Co. Payne was president of this organization (1892-1895), and in 1896 was named vice-president of its successor, the reorganized Milwaukee Electric Railway and Light Co. He was also president of the Milwaukee and Northern R.R. (1890-1893), and the Chicago and Calumet Terminal Railway (1894-1896), as well as several other railway and inter-urban lines. In various capacities, but principally through his railroad promotions, Payne was instrumental in developing the towns of North Milwaukee, Tomahawk, Babcock, and Minocqua. In addition to his widespread business activities, Payne maintained his political connections, and for many years was recognized as one of the most important stalwart Republican leaders in the state. With J.C. Spooner (q.v.) and Philetus Sawyer (q.v.), Payne virtually dominated Republican patronage in Wisconsin, and until his death played a

vital role in staving off the revolt of insurgent Republicans under the leadership of Robert M. La Follette, Sr. (q.v.). Although never a candidate for elective office, Payne was a Republican national committeeman from 1880 until his death, and in 1896 managed the Western headquarters in the presidential campaign of William McKinley. In 1900 he was instrumental in securing the nomination of Theodore Roosevelt as the Republican vice-presidential candidate, and in 1902 was appointed postmaster general in President Roosevelt's cabinet. Less than three years later after accepting his cabinet post, Payne died suddenly in Washington, D.C.

{Dict. Amer. Biog.; Who's Who in Amer., 3 (1903); W.W. Wight, H.C. Payne (Milwaukee, 1907); Wis. Mag. Hist., 35; Dict. of Wis. Biog. 1960.

e. Diana, b. 1839, Conway, Mass.; d. 1868, Westfield, N.Y.

f. Julia, b. 1841, Conway, Mass.; d. _____.

Evidently Orrin and Aliza divorced, for we find that by 1880, Orrin had married Lucinda Putnam. Lucinda d. 22 October 1911. Meanwhile, Eliza resided in Westfield, N.Y., but died at Jamestown, New York, 3 April 1886. She was bur. in Lakeview Cemetery, Jamestown, New York.

64. Elijah, b. abt. 1804, Ashfield, Mass.; d._____, Stockton, New York; m. Lucinda_____; she d. 23 December 1841, Cassadaga, New New York.

65. William B., b. 25 October 1806, Ashfield, Mass.; d. 1880, Jamestown, New York; bur. Cherry Creek Cemetery; m. Vesta Mallory; b. April 1817 d.17 April 1873, Cherry Creek, New York.

66. ABIAL B., b. abt 1807/08, Ashfield, Mass.; d. between 1875–1880; bur. Cassadaga Cemetery, Cassadaga, New York. Direct-line descendant.

67. Almon, b. abt. 1815, Chautauqua Co. New York; d._____; m. Polly _____.

In 1848, Joseph and Anna, Grantors, provided Almon, Grantee, with a section of property. [2]

Joseph and Anna (Billings) Payne (Gen. XI, No. 54) were married in Ashfield, Mass., 1 November 1792. Joseph was thirty and Anna twenty at the time of their marriage.

Sometime between 1812 and 1815, Joseph, Anna, and their four children at this time, Samuel (Gen. XII, No. 63), Elijah (Gen. XII, No. 64), William (Gen. XII, No. 65) and Abial (Gen. XII, No. 66), the youngest, moved to Stockton, Chautauqua County, New York. The oldest child, Samuel, was about ten or twelve. Abial, our next direct-line descendant, would have been just an infant. This was quite a bold move for the family—leaving a more settled Ashfield and moving to a remote, wilderness area just recently explored by such frontiersmen as Abel Beebe, Joel Fisher, and Othello Church in 1809/10.

A little historical background helps us to picture their world. The town of Stockton was not formed from Chautauqua until 9 February 1821, but according to the records, Abel Beebe, born in Springfield, Massachusetts, in 1783, came from New Amsterdam (Buffalo) in 1809. He cut his way from Laona, about nine miles (today that distance is about five miles), spending about twenty days in the opening of a road. With him came Joel Fisher and Othello Church. They built a shelter on the shore of the lower Cassadaga Lake near what is known as the "Ox-bow". They hunted and fished and spent the winter there, then returned to central New York in 1810. [1]

The records show that in November 1809, Hezekiah Vial made an original purchase of land around "Bear Creek Corners", later called "Delanti", and still later "Stockton".

No actual settlement was made, however, until 1810—when Shadrach Scofield, David Waterbury and Henry Walker settled in the southwest part of the town. [1]

Since Joseph and Anna's son, Almon, (Gen. XII, No. 66) was born in Jamestown, New York in 1815, we may assume that the family settled in the region before that time. Though they no doubt purchased land and built a home either in the Jamestown or Stockton area, no specific evidence has been found to verify this. Still, we have found that their son, Joseph, Jr. (Gen. XII, No. 62), did purchase 100 acres of land for $313.50 on 11 October 1831. [24–23] Six years later, 23 June 1837, Joseph (Gen. XI, No. 54) also purchased property from Stephen and Content Pettis in Stockton for $1400.00. It was a tract of land of 148 acres. [26–167] [12–4–12]. And then again in 1840, Joseph purchased land designated as [I–M–70–80] [I–F–60–70].

At about the time Joseph and Anna arrived in Chautauqua County, an event occurred that almost halted the sale of land, and this was the War of 1812. Many of the settlers were called out in the defense of their country. There were only forty able-bodied men in this section at the time, and eight of them served in this war. It seems likely, however, that since Joseph was fifty years old, he fell outside the category of "able-bodied" [1] and probably missed out on the rigors of battle.

Long years of financial depression and poverty followed the war of 1812, and the life of the settlers in the backwoods of Stockton was full of hardship. Although this region was not invaded (since it represented a less strategic location than Buffalo) its people made great sacrifices, nonetheless. An extract from a letter by a sergeant to Captain Silsby's Company illustrates the privations and hardships that the Payne family and others in the Stockton area must have suffered during this futile effort to defend the frontier.

"My wife and children met me at the gate to welcome me in and said, 'You will not go back again?' I told her I should, tomorrow (the third of January) and that I had the promise of being discharged in a few days. On the sixth day I returned to Buffalo with what deserters I could find, about ten. We were in season to help gather and bury the dead. I returned home the last week of February or the first of March. I found two of my cows lying dead, having died of starvation. Issac Young had brought my wife a peck of must meal. She boiled a quart and fed it to one cow at night and another quart the next morning, but it did not save her life. Young promised her a peck of corn per week until I returned home—a small allowance for her and six children. She proceeded to get supper. There was a little meat but no bread except a little piece of Johnny-cake. I said, 'Boil some potatoes', but there was not one left, and all had been fed to the cows to save their lives, but they died. Bed time came when she said, 'We will fix for bed, I suppose you have got seasoned to lying on the floor.' 'Yes,' I replied, 'and on the ground too.' She swept the floor and brought on the bed. I told her to bring on the straw bed. She said there had been no straw in the tick for three weeks; it had all been fed to the cows." (5)

These were hard times, and we can imagine similar conversations taking place in many households . . . the Payne family probably being no exception.

But the trials and hardships of this hardy crew of settlers had only begun. The summer of 1816 was known as the "Cold Season". Cold and blustery winds swept the hills of Chautauqua County, and snow fell in the summer months. Ice formed in every month of the year, and July 4th was cold and raw. It

was thought that volcanic activity on Mount Tambora in Indonesia (which erupted in 1815, spewing ash and dust particles into the atmosphere) caused a reflection of the sun's rays and kept the solar radiation from warming the earth's surface.

At any rate, the first six months of 1817 were termed the "Starving Season." Flour was $18 a barrel, potatoes $1.50 a bushel, and corn from $4.00 to $5.00 a bushel. Other articles were equally high-priced and difficult to obtain. The price of labor was 60 to 70 cents a day. Those skilled with the rifle helped to provide for their families with venison and other wild meat, but many, subsisted wholly upon fish, milk, greens and leeks until the harvest of 1817 finally brought relief. Leeks seemed to be especially plentiful in the early pioneer days.

After a winter-long diet of dried staples such as beans, pumpkins and apples, the first leeks gave the settlers a chance to enjoy something fresh and green. Nutritionally, leeks contain vitamins A and C and some protein and carbohydrates. Folklore also had it that leeks serve as a spring tonic that somehow "cleanses" the blood. [1]

Anna (Billings) Payne died 17 December 1860. From the *Fredonia Censor* of that time, the following obituary was recorded:

> "Payne, Anna—in Stockton, of old age, widow of Joseph Payne, formerly of Ashfield, Mass., in her 95th year."

Joseph died 10 April 1850 in Stockton, New York. He was said to have been buried in the Greenwood Cemetery in Stockton with Anna, but I have not been able to confirm this. The first burial in Greenwood Cemetery was made in 1822. The

records of this cemetery were accidentally burned and only a copy of the markers, recorded by Clayburne Sampson in 1951, is available. A check of these records and a visual survey of markers in the Cemetery proved unsuccessful.

The 1850 Census Records indicate that Joseph and Anna were living in Stockton with their son, Almon (Gen. XII, No. 67) and his wife, Polly. Joseph would have been 88 years of age and this was the year, 1850, that he died. Anna died ten years later.

REFERENCES FOR THIS CHAPTER

1. Berndt, C. *Stockton—Seen Through the Rear View Mirror.* Dunkirk, N.Y.: Woloszyn Printery, 1988. pp. 4, 13, 15, 16.

2. *Chautauqua County Deeds.* Book #45, p. 3.

3. *Henry Clay Payne: A Life.* Milwaukee, Wisconsin: Burdick and Allen, Printers. 1907. pp. 2, 3.

4. Waite, A.C. *Payne Family in Chautauqua County.* Jamestown, N.Y. Fenton Historical Society. (Family Group Sheet) 1982.

5. Young, Andrew, *History of Chautauqua County New York.* Buffalo, N.Y. Printing House of Matthews & Warren. 1875. p. 180.

CHAPTER XIV

Abial Payne (Gen. XII, No. 66) and His Descendants

It is a noble faculty of our nature which enables us to connect our thoughts, sympathies, and happiness, with what is distant in place and time; and looking before and after, to hold communion at once with our ancestors, and our posterity. There is a moral and philosophical respect for our ancestors, which elevates the character and improves the heart. Next to the sense of religious duty and moral feeling, I hardly know what should bear with stronger obligation on a liberal and enlightened mind, than a consciousness of an alliance with excellence which is departed; and a consciousness, too, that in its acts and conduct, and even in its sentiments and thoughts, it may be actively operating on the happiness of those that come after it.

—DANIEL WEBSTER

ABIAL PAYNE (Gen. XII, No. 66), b. 1807, Ashfield, Mass.; d. between 1875–80; bur. Cassadaga Cemetery, Cassadaga, N.Y.; m. Olive Clayville, b. abt. 1812, Oneida, N.Y.; she d. 188_; bur. Cassadaga Cemetery, Cassadaga, N.Y.

Residence: Ashfield, Mass.,Stockton/Cassadaga, N.Y.

Occupation(s): Census records of 1850, indicate Abial was a cooper; records of 1875 list him as a farmer.

GENERATION XIII

Children of Abial (Gen. XII, No. 66) and Olive (Clayville) Payne:

68. Mahala, b._____1830, in Mass.; d._____1880; m. Harvey Patton Woodcock, 31 December 1848, b. 1824, Stockton, Chautauqua Co., N.Y.; son of Charles and Abigail (Wait) Woodcock; res. town of Stockton; she bur. Cassadaga Cemetery, lot no. 15; he d. 30 November 1910, Dunkirk Hospital, Dunkirk, N.Y.; bur. Cassadaga Cemetery, lot no. 86; After Mahala's death, he resided with son, George, in Cassadaga. Had four children. [2]

69. Vesta, b._____1832, in Mass.; d. _____; m. Charles R. Oaks in later years; resided in East Randolph, N.Y. in 1904; believed no children. [2]

70. Joseph, b._____1836, in Mass.; d. _____; resided with parents in Stockton, N.Y.; left area, returned with family in 1865; resided for a short time, then left area again; m. Matilda _____; b. 1839, England.

    Children of Joseph and Matilda:

    a. George; b. 1856, Illinois; resided St. Louis, Mo. in 1904.

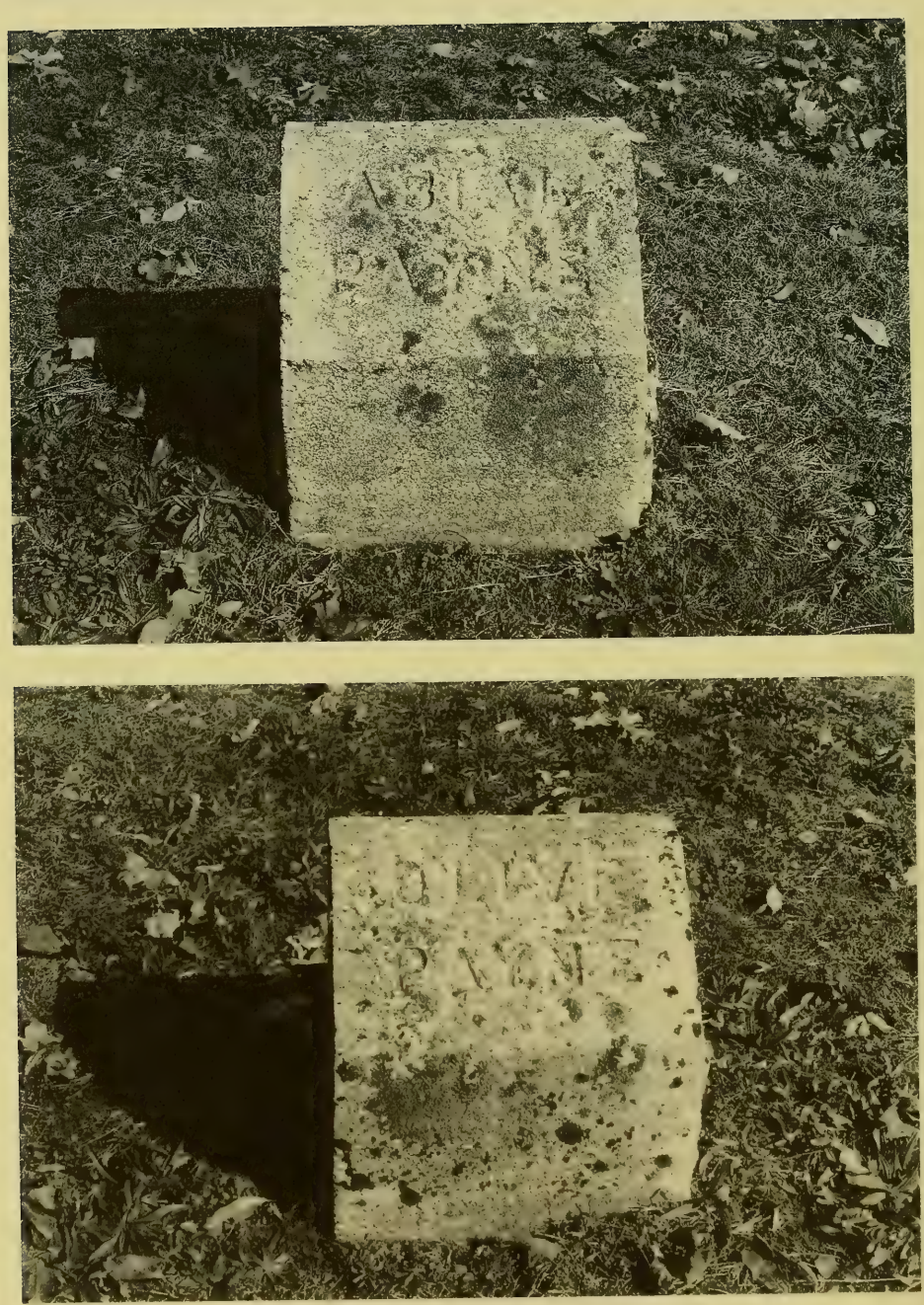
    b. Flora J. 1860, Iowa.

c. Lewis, b. 1863; Iowa; resided Los Angeles, Ca. in 1904.

d. Florence, b. St Louis, Mo. abt. 1904. (2)

71. Ransom M., b._____1840, Stockton, N.Y.; d. 10 July 1905; m. Jennie O (Meger)?, b. July 1849, New York, abt. 1867; resided at one time in Knoxville, Tioga County, Pa. He was Justice of Peace in Stockton, N.Y. Had one son, Julius Melvin, b. Knoxville, Tioga County, Pa. 6 August 1869. Ranson bel. bur. in Phillips plot, Cassadaga Cemetery. Jennie resided in home of son in Falkner, N.Y.; bur. Cassadaga Cemetery, 13 May 1929. (2)

72. Laura, b._____1841, at Stockton, N.Y.; d. 13 January 1904, Stockton (Cassadaga) N.Y.; bur. Cassadaga Cemetery, Cassadaga, N.Y. 1/m John King, (1832–1904), 9 December 1860, Cassadaga, N.Y.; div. before 1875; m/2 Enoch Pettit, after 1875, since she was living with her parents, Abial and Olive, as Laura, or as recorded in the 1875 Census, (Lorrisa) King. Enoch was the son of James and Chloe Pettit; James was a gunsmith by trade, as was Enoch; Enoch d. 3 July 1891 and is bur. Cassadaga Cemetery. Laura gave parcels of land to Claude B. Payne (Gen. XIV, No. 76), 24 May 1902, and to Alice Payne, dau. of Claude and Ellen (Cardot) Payne, 11 August 1903, for $94.00. In her will, dated 13 December 1904, she left additional land to Jennie O. Payne, the wife of Ransom Payne, and to MARSHALL B. PAYNE (Gen. XIII, No. 75). Laura inherited land following the death of her second husband, Enoch, 3 July 1891, who had received one and a half acres of land from her father, James, 9 January 1882. Laura's will [14–83]. She was a resident of Stockton for 56 years.



Gravestones of Abial and Olive (Clayville) Payne, Cassadaga Cemetery, Cassadaga, New York.

Abial and Olive's daughter, Laura Payne (Pettit) b. 1841; d. 1904.

73. Henry, b._____1844, Stockton, N.Y.; d._____ (was a resident of Genesee, Tioga Co. Pa. as of 1904).

74. Emeline, b._____1845, Stockton, N.Y.; d._____; 1/m John Whitney, res. of Wellsville, Allegheny Co., N.Y.; Had two ch., a son, Methe, b. 1864, Allegheny Co., N.Y.; resided in Wellsville, New York; m. Myra A. Haliday; 2nd. son, unk.; Emeline 2/m_____Hall, in East Randolph, New York in 1904. [2]

75. MARSHALL B. PAYNE, (Gen. XIII, No. 75), b. August 1851, Stockton, (Cassadaga) New York; d. 9 December 1913; bur. Cassadaga Cemetery; m. Imogene Young, 1875. Direct-line descendant. [2]

After marrying in Stockton, New York—probably between 1828–30—Abial and Olive returned to Abial's birthplace of Ashfield, Massachusetts. The records suggest that they lived there for about six years—since three of their children were born in Ashfield: Mahala, Vesta, and a son, Joseph (Census Records of New York, 1850). On the other hand, the fact that Abial's and Olive's other children were all born in New York State makes it likely that the family returned to the Stockton area between 1836–1840. (The basis for this conjecture is that Joseph was born in Massachusetts in 1836, and his brother, the next child in the chronology, Ransom, was born in New York State in 1839/40.) (Census Records of 1850)

Why Abial and Olive returned to Stockton remains unclear. We suppose they either became disenchanted with farming the rocky ground of Ashfield, or deeply missed their family in western New York. Whatever the scenario, they returned to Chautauqua County six years later.

This interesting period saw a major transition not only in our family's lives, but also in the economic development of their world. The so-called "pioneer" period was by now in its later stages in Chautauqua County, and the early farming period was dawning. The Stockton/Cassadaga area had begun its transition to an agricultural region.

The early settlers found a market for their goods, and a period of prosperity began. Expansion was evident from the number of saw mills that were constructed. Boards were sawed, frame houses with "stoops" or porches were built, and everywhere signs of growing prosperity were evident. [1]

The population in 1835 for the whole town was 1,943 people. Unfortunately, this period of growth seems to have ended within a few years, since the population for 1865 included ony 1,665 souls. But during the period of expansion real estate values rose, and there was a great deal of land speculation. [1] Perhaps this explains why Abial and Olive invested in several tracts of land after returning from Ashfield. We located three such parcels listed in the Recorder of Deeds office in Mayville, Chautauqua County. These were properties known as [I–30–40], [2–F–5–10], [I–20–30]. Abial probably recognized the purchase of land as a good investment as he responded to the tenor of his expansive era.

According to the census records of New York in the year 1850, Abial's occupation was recorded as "cooper". Since we know his father, Joseph (Gen. XI, No. 54) was also a cooper, we can safely speculate that Abial followed in his father's footsteps. Of course, trades were frequently passed down from father to son, and large barrels were much in demand, since great quantities of goods required containers for storage and transporting. One would expect the business of barrel making to have been quite profitable during this time.

From 1850 to 1875, we have scant information concerning the Abial Payne family. Most of their children were still young, with our next direct-line descendant, Marshall B., born in 1851. Our study of the census records of 1875 also shows that Abial and Olive were living with their daughter, Laura (Gen. XIII, No. 72), in a frame home in the Stockton/Cassadaga area. Laura had been married to her first husband, John King, from about 1860 to 1874. Since John's name was not recorded in the census records of 1875, however, we can assume the couple

had already separated. Laura was thirty-five, her father, Abial, sixty-eight, and her mother, Olive, sixty-four. Because of his age (or perhaps for health reasons), Abial's occupation was now recorded as "farmer" and no longer "cooper".

On 1 September 1875, Abial bought for $500.00 a parcel of land, described as lot #16, Town 4 and Range 12, by the Holland Land Company, from Harvey and Mahala (Payne) Woodcock, Abial's oldest daughter, and his son-in-law. It is rather curious why sixty-eight-year-old Abial wanted to buy land at this time in his life, or why Harvey and Mahala were willing to sell their land. Did they need the money, and did Abial want to expand his land holdings? We have no way of knowing.

The quest for more information about these expansion-minded ancestors took a dramatic turn in the fall of 1991, after Peggy and I obtained a plot plan of the Cassadaga Cemetery, and set off in search of additional family graves. During a rather extensive search, we unexpectedly happened upon the gravestones of Abial and Olive Payne. This was certainly one of those events that makes genealogical research so exciting! Of course, we were especially thrilled to discover that two graves were not included on the cemetery plot plan we had been provided, and it was nice to be able to add their names to the record.

Both markers were very weathered and rather difficult to read, but at least we were able to identify their gravestones and verify their burial in the Cassadaga Cemetery. No dates were carved into the stones, but we can presume from previous data found in the census records that their deaths occurred sometime in the 1880's.

REFERENCES FOR THIS CHAPTER

1. Berndt, Cathryn, *Stockton—Seen Through the Rear View Mirror.* Dunkirk, N.Y.: Woloszyn Printery. 1988. p. 26.

2. Waite, Anna C., *Payn—Pain—Paine—Payne Family in Chautauqua County.* Fenton Historical Society Library, Jamestown, New York. 1982.

CHAPTER XV

Marshall B. Payne (Gen. XIII, No. 75) and His Descendants

Like as the waves make towards the pebbled shore,
So do our minutes hasten to their end;
Each changing place with that which goes before.
In sequent toil all forwards do contend.
Navitity, once in the main of light,
Crawls to maturity, wherewith being crowned.
Crooked eclipses 'gainst his glory fight,
And Time that gave doth now his gift confound.
Time doth transfix the flourish set on youth
and delves the parallels in beauty's brow,
Feeds on the rarities of nature's truth.
And nothing stands but for his scythe to mow;
And yet to times in hope my verse shall stand,
Praising thy worth, despite his cruel hand.

—SHAKESPEARE, Sonnet 60

MARSHALL B. PAYNE (Gen. XIII, No. 75), b. August 1851, Cassadaga, New York; d. 9 December 1912, bur. 11 December 1912, Cassadaga Cemetery, Cassadaga, N.Y.; m.

Imogene Julia Young, 1871; she b. 20 September 1853; d. 26 October 1930; bur. Cassadaga Cemetery.

Residence: Cassadaga, New York.

Occupation(s): Stone Mason; Businessman, Hardware Store; Post Master, Burnhams, New York.

Organizations: I.O.O.F. Lodge.

GENERATION XIV

Children of Marshall B. (Gen. XIII, No. 75) and Imogene (Young) Payne:

76. Claude Belmont Payne (Gen. 14, No. 76); b. 7 August 1872, Forestville, Chautauqua County, N. Y.; d. 5 September 1945, age seventy-three, bur. Cassadaga Cemetery; 1/m Alice G. Hill, b. 1874, Arkwright, Chautauqua County, N.Y., dau. of Alvin T. and Agnes (Carpenter) Hill; she d. 1905; bur. Cassadaga Cemetery; Claude widely known for his artistry in masonry work; an early member of the Lily Dale Assembly.

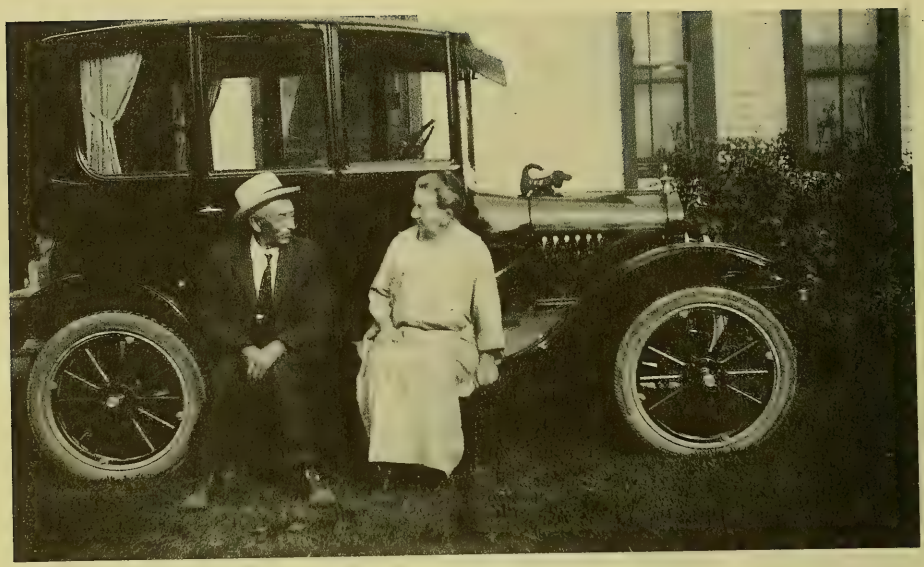
    Nickname: "Big-Jig".

    Children of Claude Belmont and Alice Payne:

    a. Esther, b. 24 April 1895, Cassadaga, N.Y.; d. 22 February 1981; m. Carl England; she was a Practical Nurse, lived at 222 Dale Drive, Cassadaga, N.Y. Had two sons:

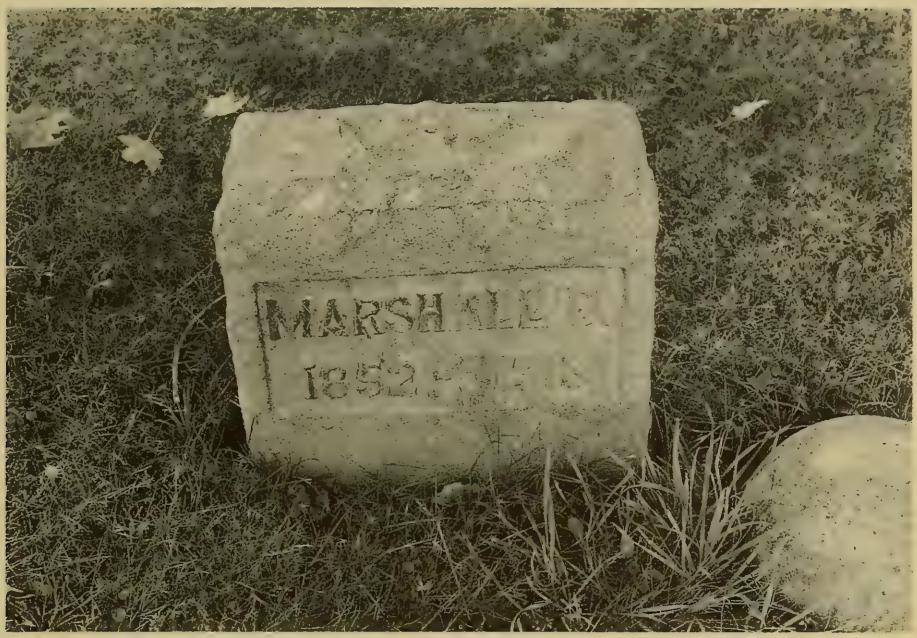
        i. Paul, b. 1915, in Stockton, N.Y. d, 18 September 1965; bur. Cassadaga Cemetery; he m. 2/w; had four children.

Marshall B. Payne, Esther (Payne) England,
and John Young about 1909.



Imogene (Young) Payne and her second husband, Hiram Burnham seated on the running board of their automobile before World War I.

Imogene sitting on the front porch of her home on Maple Ave. located next to the Cassadaga Cemetery about 1909.



Gravestones of Marshall B. and Imogene Payne Burnham, Cassadaga, New York

Looking south on Main St., Cassadaga, New York, about 1900.

Just across the street, north of the Hotel, was the Cassadaga House, a temperance tavern and one of the first inns to be operated in the community. For many years it was known as the Phillips Temperance House, and catered to early travelers in the County.

ii. David F., m. unk; had son and dau.; resided in Cassadaga.

b. Alice, b. 18 November 1905, Cassadaga, N.Y.; d. 22 April 1975; Cassadaga Cemetery; m. Robert H. Page; he. b. 10 July 1898; d. 3 January 1983. She was a teacher; resided in Cassadaga, N.Y.; had one son Robert Jr. b. 29 March 1928; m. Louise A. Bauer, b. 9 June 1928; m. 10 September 1958. Had two children:

i. Roberta Lynn (Pawlak), b. 16 June 1959.

ii. Richard Lynn, b. 25 March 1964.

Claude 2/w Ellen Cardot; b. 1861, d. 15 December 1946; no children; bur. Cassadaga Cemetery, Cassadaga, N.Y.

William Shakespeare, who four centuries ago posed that mighty question—"What's in a name?"—would probably have gotten a big kick out of C.L.Todd's amusing *The Sittin' Stone.* And why not? Because this hilarious, contemporary volume catalogues some very interesting and humorous insights about the names chosen for many communities in the state of New York and the County of Chautauqua— where many of our direct-line descendants, including Marshall B. Payne, made their homes. Todd notes that many were "grandiose names pilfered from the classics, such as Utica, Rome, Syracuse, Palmyra, Homer, etc., or other names plucked from world geography books: Berlin, Warsaw, Liverpool, Poland, Mexico, Copenhagan, Geneva, Carthage, Amsterdam, Rotterdam and Potsdam."

Early British travelers taking the "grand tour" from New York to Niagara were stunned by these names, of course, adding a comic touch. Mrs. Basil Hall called them "a strange jumble", and Lady Emmeline Whortly wrote, "A noble line of places indeed, if their actual circumstances and proportions harmonized with the pretensions." Captain Frederick Marryat fumed, "How I do detest these old names vamped up! Why do not the Americans take Indian names? They need not be so scrupulous about it since they have robbed the Indians of everything else!" Tongue in cheek, the clever Todd continues, "One reason for the pedestrian names chosen by Chautauqua County's town fathers may well be, of course, that the counties settled earlier had used up all the others." [3]

The earliest settlers also seem to have been blessed with a wry sense of humor when it came to naming their first settlements. Author Elizabeth Crocker records some of the colorful monikers that have long since disappeared (or perhaps never

appeared on Chautauqua County maps)—names such as Quailtrap, Toddim, Slab City, Butter Banners, Wango, Grunt, Podunk, Elder Bottom, Broken Straw, Slide, and Rumless. Later arrivals took a more sober view as the settlements expanded, and began to choose names from the roster of famous Americans, among them, Clymer, Stockton, Sherman and Ellery (all named for signers of the Declaration of Independence), or from early officers of the Holland Land Company, such as Busti, (pronounced "Busteye") and Ellicott. [3]

Cassadaga itself, was called by the Senaca Indians "Gus-da-go" and is located in the central region of the eastern line of Chautauqua County. That area also includes three small, deep lakes connected by narrow channels chocked with pink-and-white-flowered lily pads big enough to support small basking turtles, and providing shady retreats for perch, bass, blue-gills, punkin seeds, and long-whiskered bullheads.

Marshall B. Payne was born and grew up during a time when industry and development— both of the villages and of awakened minds—was at its greatest in the history of Cassadaga. Those years between 1880 and the turn of the century proved to be an especially pleasant time, and a time of reform, building and prosperity. It was an era of hard work, but one of relaxation, as well.

At the four corners of Cassadaga, there were a cooper shop, three blacksmith shops, buggy and wagon makers, a creamery, cheese factories, a carriage repair shop, and a Buffalo-based company that owned the rights to the lake bottom and dug out marl with a derrick and scow. (Marl is an earthy, crumbling deposit consisting chiefly of clay mixed with calcium carbonate, and used as a fertilizer for soils deficient in lime.) [2]

At the other end of town, at the foot of Stockton Hill, was a small community known as Burnhams. Burnhams was named after Ashel Burnham, father of Hiram Burnham, my great-grandmother Imogene (Young) Payne's (Gen. XIII) second husband. She married Hiram a year after the death of Marshall in 1912.

Real estate trasactions in 1895 are recorded as follows between Marshall B. Payne and Hiram Burnham: [268–556] [15–4–12]; and James O. Mattison [274–53]. Also in 1895, Imogene Payne of Marshall B. Payne [219–367] [16–4–12],and a life lease [274–193 1/2].

The population of all of Cassadaga during this period was about 250 residents, scattered from the four corners of Cassadaga to Burnhams. The building of the railroad and its location in Burnhams created a business atmosphere, as The Dunkirk Allegheny Valley and Pittsburgh Railroad was completed to Sinclairville, 1 June 1871. Soon the stage coach and the transportion of freight by teams of horses and wagons would be a thing of the past. But the use of the horse had by no means passed from the scene. Its valued use by farmers continued for many years . . . even after the automobile came into popular use, since the expense of owning an automobile was out of the reach of the majority. The horse for many people was a valued family member, and highly regarded, as the following newspaper account attests:

> From the *Grape Belt*, Dec. 20, 1912
>
> "To the memory of Faithful Old Doc Payne:
>
> " 'Doc', the old family horse of M.B. Payne, was killed a short time ago. He was an old favorite of

> the family, and had been with them since he was a colt. His infirmaties so increased with age that he finally had to be shot."

With the railroad came a freight house that received shiny buggies, wagons and stoves, while shipping out dairy products, maple syrup, baskets, and cattle. Business at Burnhams was thriving. There was a small hotel called the Miller House, a boarding house, and the Company House, owned by the railroad.

Imogene's father, John H. Young, was the first Postmaster of Burnhams. Imogene married Marshall B. Payne (Gen. XIII, No. 75) in 1871, and John Young continued as Postmaster (at least until 1892), since I found his signature on post office records dated 30 June 1892.

In 1878, the year before my Grandfather, Clyde B. Payne (Gen. XIV, No. 77), was born, Marshall founded the Payne Supply Company at Burnhams. A combination hardware, grocery and post office, it continued in service under his management until 6 May 1912, when his son, Clyde B. Payne, assumed control upon Marshall's death, 9 December 1912. Practically everything was sold in the store and Marshall, good businessman that he was, expanded his service to meet the needs of those living in the area. Since lamps used kerosene, he became the area's chief supplier, bringing large quantities to the village from Dunkirk in barrels carried on horse-drawn wagons.

Among the many other businesses in Burnhams was the Hiram Burnham Mill, which consisted of a saw mill, planing mill and cheese-box factory. This mill was the site of a

catastrophic boiler explosion 3 January 1888 that injured a number of workmen. Miraculously, however, no one was killed. According to Gerald Todd, local Cassadaga historian, "The main part of the boiler, weighing nearly a ton, sailed over three buildings, including one of three stories, and landed 20 rods from the mill on the crossing of the Hill and Valley roads. The smoke stack went high in the air, and buried itself up to the second joint in the same spot, while many of the flues were found in nearby buildings. The building was totally wrecked and was replaced later by a new mill which still stands by the railroad tracks. Charles Burnham, brother of Hiram, lost a leg, and Walter Whitney removed splinters of glass from his face for years afterwards." [2]

(The tracks have since been removed and the mill no longer does large-volume millwork, and the other businesses have long ago disappeared. Burnhams now exists only in the memories of those who were residents at the time.)

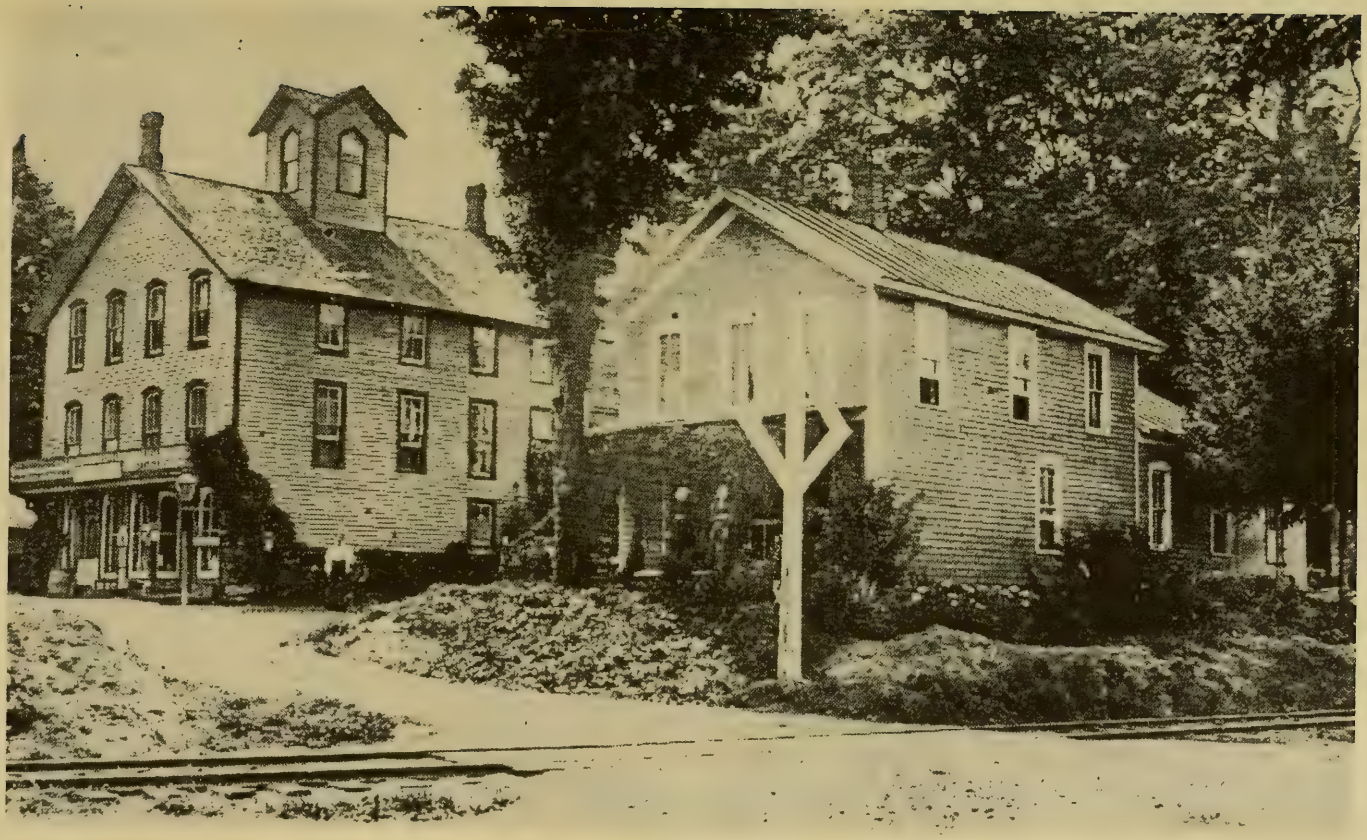
The Chautauqua Cement Company, adjoining the D.A.V & P.R.R., was organized in 1890. Cement was made from the rich deposit of shell marl underlying the lakes and surrounding swamps and marshes, as previously mentioned. But that company was destroyed by fire in 1905.

The records also show that George Woodcock operated a feed store at Burnhams, while Elizah Woods owned a feed mill, coal yard and cider mill. In addition, a railroad repair shop was built large enough to accommodate any locomotive that needed repair.

A year before Marshall B. Payne founded Payne Supply Company in 1878, the era of steam began in Cassadaga. It

The post office and Payne's hardware store at Burnhams, New York in the 1800's. John Young was postmaster and owner until at least 1882.

The post office and Payne's hardware store at Burnhams, New York in 1907.



Across the tracks from the hardware store and post office was a former hotel, later store and home of John H. Young. The home was later bought by the author's grandparents, William and Lillian MacCubbin. Photo taken about 1895.

began when another enterprising young man John Edgar Pierpont, put upon the lakes a screw-propelled, twenty-foot craft which he had purchased secondhand from a Chautauqua Lake owner. It was christened the "Water Lily". Business was brisk, especially as the new "spiritualist" community which was forming along the eastern shore of the Upper Cassadaga Lake began to gain numbers rapidly. [2]

For a while the little steamboat had things its own way, carrying passengers up and down the three lakes. It was not long, however, before a new and larger boat appeared and competition began. A stern-wheeler, also purchased from an owner on Chautauqua Lake, made a land voyage on runners in mid-winter, pulled through the snow by four teams of horses —a trip which took an entire day and well into the night. The new boat was named the "Marion Skidmore", after a prominent spiritualist leader, and was owned jointly by a corporation made up of several local citizens.

Pierpont soon saw that he would be unable to compete with this new and better boat, so with the help of expert boat-builders, he began constructing a new craft. Finally completed, the craft was placed upon the water and christened the "J.E. Pierpont". The boat proved much speedier and more comfortable than its rival, the "Marion Skidmore". [2]

On a trip up the lakes it could easily out-distance the older craft, and therefore drew more of the trade. This naturally caused considerable bitterness on the part of the "Skidmore's" owners; and after running for a single season, the "J.E. Pierpont" was discovered one morning burned to the water's edge. The affair was known as "The Celebrated Cassadaga Boat-

burning Case", with the trial lasting three days at the Chautauqua County Court House in Mayville. Eventually the tribunal awarded the "Pierpont" owner $1500. [2]

It was always a problem navigating the rather shallow and narrow channels connecting the three lakes, so in 1885, H.S. Powell came to Lily Dale from Cleveland, Ohio, and after procuring the aid of a government dredge, proceeded to clear the channels. On the Lily Dale shore, Powell—along with some other backers—built twin boats which were later christened the "R.S. Lillie" and the "White Wings". These boats were between fifty and sixty feet long, with fifty-horse-power boilers —beautiful crafts, we are told—costing each owner $3500. They ran frequently for a number of years, but were entirely too large to navigate the channels with ease, even after dredging.

With the "Marion Skidmore" still plying her trade, however, there was simply not enough passenger traffic to keep three boats in operaton. After a time Powell sold his two crafts to the pioneer boatman, J.E. Pierpont, who ran one of them for a while, but later stripped them of their machinery and metal parts, leaving the hulls to rot side by side at their Ox Bow mooring. The days of the "Marion Skidmore" were also numbered, and it was not long before she, too, slipped beneath the waters. [2]

In the late 1930's, I observed remnants of one of these steamboats near the shoreline of the Ox-Bow. Then, on a trip in 1992, while researching this history, I returned to the same shoreline . . . and found part of the hull still resting under the lake's surface and looking exactly as I had remembered it fifty years before!

By the turn of the century, there was only one veteran boatman still plying the Cassadaga Lakes; he commanded a small steamer named "The Winifred". This craft had been built by William Knopp, affectionately known as "Cap". Back and forth he steamed, blowing the "Winifred's" shrill whistle as he approached the landings. As the only master of a steam boat on the lake, Knopp did a prosperous business. [2]

But time was marching on; the automobile was becoming more common, and people began to take their pleasure trips on rubber tires, rather than on such old steamboats as "The Winifred". Undaunted, the old craft creaked and shook as she continued to kick up her wake, and no one would have been surprised to see her boiler drop through the hull at any moment. On what was to be her final voyage, the passengers declared they were thankful to reach shore! And well they might have, for when "Cap" came down to the landing the next morning, "The Winifred" was resting peacefully on the lake bottom. [2]

But the mighty steamboats were only one of the curious sights to be seen in this world of enchanted lakes. On the shores of Upper Cassadaga Lake is located what claims to be the largest Spiritualist Assembly in the world. This interesting group had its beginning in Laona, New York, in 1829, when hand bills were distributed in that town announcing the arrival of one "Dr. Moran", a pupil of Dr. Mesmer, the father of hypnotism. William Johnson, the son of a local Methodist minister, found he was able to hypnotize many people, and became a major figure on the local scene. Weekly demonstrations were given, and crowds increased and soon people from

all over Chautauqua County came to witness the demonstration of the newly discovered force. One of the most enthusiastic members was William Alden of Cassadaga. Interest continued up until the Civil War, when it seriously declined. William Alden, now an old man, invited a newly revived Association to his grove at the south side of his farmhouse on the shore of the lake; that farmhouse eventually became the Leolyn Inn at the entrance to Lily Dale.

In 1873, two significant picnics were held—one in June and the other in September. Since the distance was so great between Laona and the Alden farm and so much pleasure was derived from these picnics, it was decided a new association should be formed. Forty acres of land was purchased from John Fisher, my grandmother, Olive Payne's great-grandfather, on the same side of the lake as the Alden farmhouse. Thus, the present Lily Dale Assembly grounds were established.

The first meeting on the new grounds was held in September, 1879. At that time it was called the Cassadaga Lakes Free Association and so remained until the early eighteen-nineties, when it was changed to the "City of Light."

In the early turn of the century new incorporation papers were established and the name Lily Dale Assembly of Spiritualists was established. [2]

It was an intriguing saga, but all of the stories one could conjure up about Marshall Payne's participation in the Spiritualist world of Lily Dale would be pure speculation, since family records do not indicate active participation in the Spiritualist movement, aside from John Fisher's business dealings with the

A peaceful summer Sunday afternoon on Cassadaga Lake. The Steamer Winifred is on the far left. Photo taken at the turn of the century.

The steamer Marion Skidmore. It was the second steamer on Cassadaga Lake. Circa 1878.

Steamer R.S. Lillie on Lower Cassadaga Lake taking on passengers. Circa 1891.

"Cap" Knopp's steamer, the Winifred. It was the last steamer on Cassadaga Lake. Picture taken about 1905.

Coming through a narrow channel connecting Upper Cassadaga Lake with Middle Lake. Circa 1890.

A view of Melrose Park just inside the entrance of the Lily Dale Assembly at about 1900.

"association". Still, the historical accord does contain other aspects of the life that Marshall and his family must have participated in. They surely attended events in Lily Dale, and dances in the amphitheater. They listened to Ole Max fiddle from a raft of logs covered with plank flooring, as it was pushed along the lake by a small steamboat. And they may have attended meetings among the trees, as well.

Marshall B. Payne died 9 December 1912. The following obituary was published in the *Grape Belt* newspaper, December, 1912.

> "Burnhams, Dec. 20 — The funeral of Marshall B. Payne was held at his late home on Wednesday, December 11. The services were conducted by the I.O.O.F. Lodge, of which Mr. Payne was a member.
>
> "The address was by Phinn Miller of Buffalo, who spoke words of comfort to the bereaved family. The bearers were all member of the Odd Fellows Lodge. Miss Jennie Carpenter sang two beautiful selections, *Beckoning Hands* and *Somewhere the Sun is Shining*. Floral tributes were in great profusion. The body was laid to rest in the family lot in Cassadaga Cemetery.
>
> "Among those from out of town who attended the funeral were: Mr. Will Young and Mrs. Will Burnett, Rochester; Phinn Miller, Buffalo; Ernest Erdle, South Dayton; Julius Payne, Jamestown; Mrs. Watterman, Silver Creek; Earl Young, Cherry Creek; Mrs. Joseph Woodcock, Fredonia.

"Mr. Payne was born in Cassadaga and spent his whole life here. He was married to Imogene Young in 1871 and to them two sons were born, Claude and Clyde Payne, both residing at this place. Mr. Payne conducted a hardware store for a number of years and was postmaster."

I shall conclude this discussion of Marshall B. Payne's generation by including a copy of his will.

The Will of Marshall B. Payne of Cassadaga, New York

"The last will and testament of Marshall B. Payne of the town of Stockton in the County of Chautauqua and the State of New York.

"In the name of God, Amen: I Marshall B. Payne of Stockton aforesaid considering the uncertainty of this mortal life, of the age of thirty eight years, and being sound of mind and memory, do make publish and declare this to be my last will and testament hereby annulling and revoking all former wills by me made.

"First: I will and direct my executrix hereinafter named to pay out of my estate all my lawful debts and demands against me or my estate all my funeral expenses, and for a suitable sett of stones properly inscribed set at my grave.

"Second: I give bequeath and devise to my beloved wife Immogene Payne all my real and personal estate of whatsoever name or nature and wheresoever located, to be hers and for her sale use, benefit and behoof during the full term of her natural life, or so long as she shall remain my widow.

"And if the use of the same shall at any time during the said term of her life, or during the time she remains my widow become inadequate for her proper support, in a manner suitable to her condition and standing, I hereby direct my executrix hereinafter named to then sell so much of my said personal or real estate, or both as may be necessary and to apply the proceeds for her said suitable and comfortable support.

"Third: Should my said wife marry again then I direct that my said personal and real estate to be equally divided between my said wife and Claude B. Payne and Clyde B. Payne, each to share and share alike, to be received by them when they become of age provided my said wife comes into the possession of my said property and she marries again, and before my children become of age.

"Fourth: I do hereby nominate, constitute and appoint my beloved wife Immogene Payne sole executrix of this my last will and testament.

"In witness Whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this 26th day of June A.D. 1888.

M.B. Payne

"The within instrument, consisting of one sheet (legal cap) was at the date thereof signed sealed and declared by said Marshall B. Payne, as and for his last will and testament, in the presence of us, who at his request, and in his presence and in the presence of each other have subscribed our names as attesting witnesses thereto.

Chas. Phillips Cassadaga Chaut. Co. N.Y.
Clayton Derby

"Recorded the foregoing last will and testament of M.B. Payne deceased, and compared the same with the original will this 22 day of January 1913.

Will D. Parker"

REFERENCES FOR THIS CHAPTER

1. *Grape Belt*, Dec. 1912, obituary.

2. Souvenir Historical Book, *Cassadaga—Lily Dale Sesqui Centennial 1809–1959*, June 28–July 5, 1959. New York: Niagara Frontier Publishing Co. pp. 9, 10, 12, 15, 16, 17, 18.

3. Todd, Charles L. *The "Sittin' Stone"*. Herkimer, N.Y.: Herkimer Print Inc. 1984. pp. 4, 5, 57.

CHAPTER XVI

Clyde Burdette Payne (Gen. XIV, No. 77) and His Descendants

I know not what the future hath
Of marvel or surprise
Assured alone that life and death
His mercy underlies.

And if my heart and flesh are weak
To bear an untried pain,
The bruised reed He will not breach
But strengthen and sustain.

And so, beside the silent sea,
I wait the muffled oar;
No harm from Him can come to me
On ocean or on shore.

I know not where His islands lift
Their fronded palms in air;
I only know I cannot drift
Beyond His love and care.

—JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER, *The Eternal Goodness*

CLYDE BURDETTE PAYNE (Gen. XIV, No. 77), b. 11 October 1879, Cassadaga, New York; d. 17 October 1968; bur. Cassadaga Cemetery, 20 October 1968; m. Olive Beebe, abt. 1903/04; she was b. 10 August 1879, Cassadaga, New York; d. 2 January 1952, bur. Cassadaga Cemetery; dau. of Frank and Lydia (Fisher) Beebe, of Cassadaga, New York.

Residence: 152 Maple Ave. Cassadaga, New York.

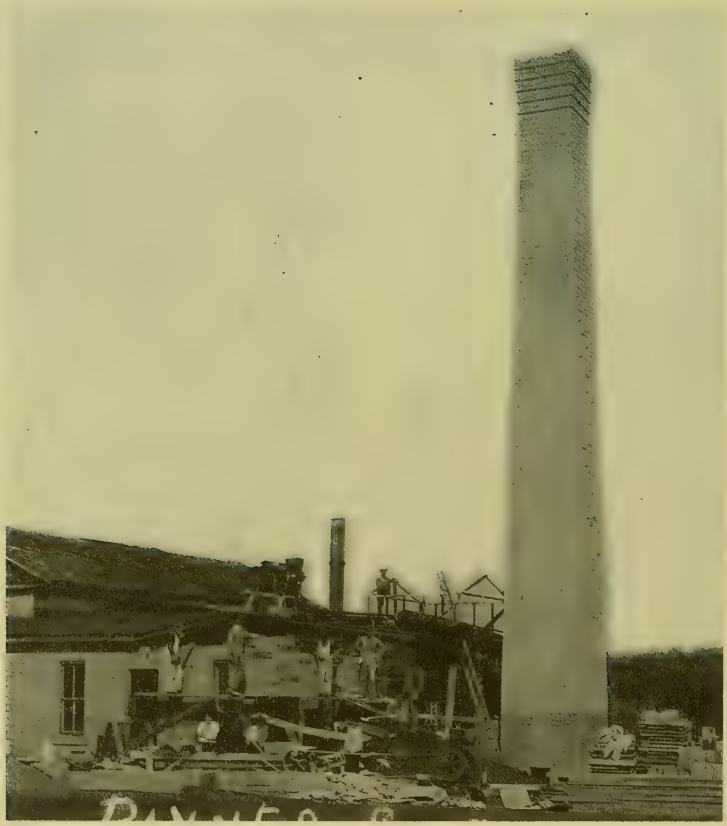
Service: Life member of Forest Lodge 166, A. and A.M., Fredonia, N.Y. Jamestown Consistory of Scottish Rite. In 1968, was oldest living member of the Cassadaga fire department. Member of the Cassadaga School Board, Town Clerk 1908. Served as Postmaster of Burnhams for 45 years. Nickname: "Little Jig".

GENERATION XV

Children of Clyde B. Payne (Gen. XIV, No. 77) and Olive (Beebe) Payne:

78. Maurine (Gen. XV, No. 78), b. 18 April 1904, Cassadaga, New York; d. 31 January 1976, Englewood, Florida, heart failure; cremation/requiem at St. David's Episcopal Church, Englewood, Florida on 4 February 1976. bur. St. James Episcopal Church cemetery. m. 1/h Harry Mercer of Pittsburgh, Pa., abt. 1921. He d. abt. 1922/3, suicide; m. 2/h Leo Spencer Murtaugh abt.1930/31; he was b. 15 October 1896, d. 27 February 1961, and bur. in St. James Episcopal Church cemetery, Hyde Park, New York. She m. 3/h Lawrence Edgar Codner 27 October 1962, at Englewood, Florida.

Clyde and Claude Payne about 1885.



The Pierpont cider mill under construction. The seventy-foot chimney was built by Payne-Sons Contractors during World War I.

Perhaps it is unfair to label some people as your "favorites" in this world—but Aunt Maurine and Uncle Leo Murtaugh, her second husband, were just that to me. They seemed ideally suited; a mutual love and respect flourished between them, and it was also apparent that Aunt Maurine and Uncle Leo would cruise along in this life with grace, confidence and dignity.

I spent many wonderful summer weeks during my early years at their home in Hyde Park, New York, and at their summer "camp" in the Adirondack Mountains, between Old Forge and Inlet, New York, on Fourth Lake of the Fulton Chain of Lakes. During these pleasant summer interludes, I learned very early in my life that those attributes I found admirable—such as fairness, compassion, integrity of purpose, and respect—are best taught by the kind of example they set. They treated me with the specialness given a son. (And, in a way, perhaps I was!) Having no children was a tragedy for them, but good fortune for me, since I became a "surogate son" to them. They favored me with such things as trips to the circus and visits to the New York World's Fair in 1939 and 1940. I was given instruction in which fork and spoon to use when eating in the finest restaurants . . . such as the elegant Old Forge Inn, with its classy string quartet! I was also taught how to paddle a canoe, swim, float, climb Bald Mountain, and Aunt Maurine introduced me to the pleasures of curling up in front of a crackling fire and enjoying a good book on a damp, chilly and rainy afternoon in the mountains. I was hopelessly spoiled!

Aunt Maurine was bright; she had graduated from Fredonia State Normal School as a teacher. She also had a wonderful sense of humor, perhaps passed along from my Grandpa

Payne, and an outgoing personality that reflected sunshine wherever she went or whatever she did. Her conversation was quick and lively, and she projected a great deal of charm and enthusiasm, making friends quickly and easily. She was at home anywhere.

As for Uncle Leo, he was a gentleman and a "gentle man" in the truest sense of the word. Even in his "relaxing clothes", he presented a distinguished appearance, and his calm and sensible approach to life was best described in the motto used at Aunt Maurine's and Uncle Leo's mountain retreat: "Relax and float".

Uncle Leo worked hard five days a week as a salesman for Burroughs Adding Machine Company. His assigned territory was along the beautiful Hudson Valley in Dutchess County, New York. I can still picture him going to work in those light summer suits, matching hat and shined shoes, dressing as if each day were Sunday. In colder weather, of course, he would put on his black overcoat, white scarf, and black homburg hat. Even at ten years of age, I was mightily impressed, and to this day I can still picture him as that distinguished gentleman—my Uncle, Leo Murtaugh.

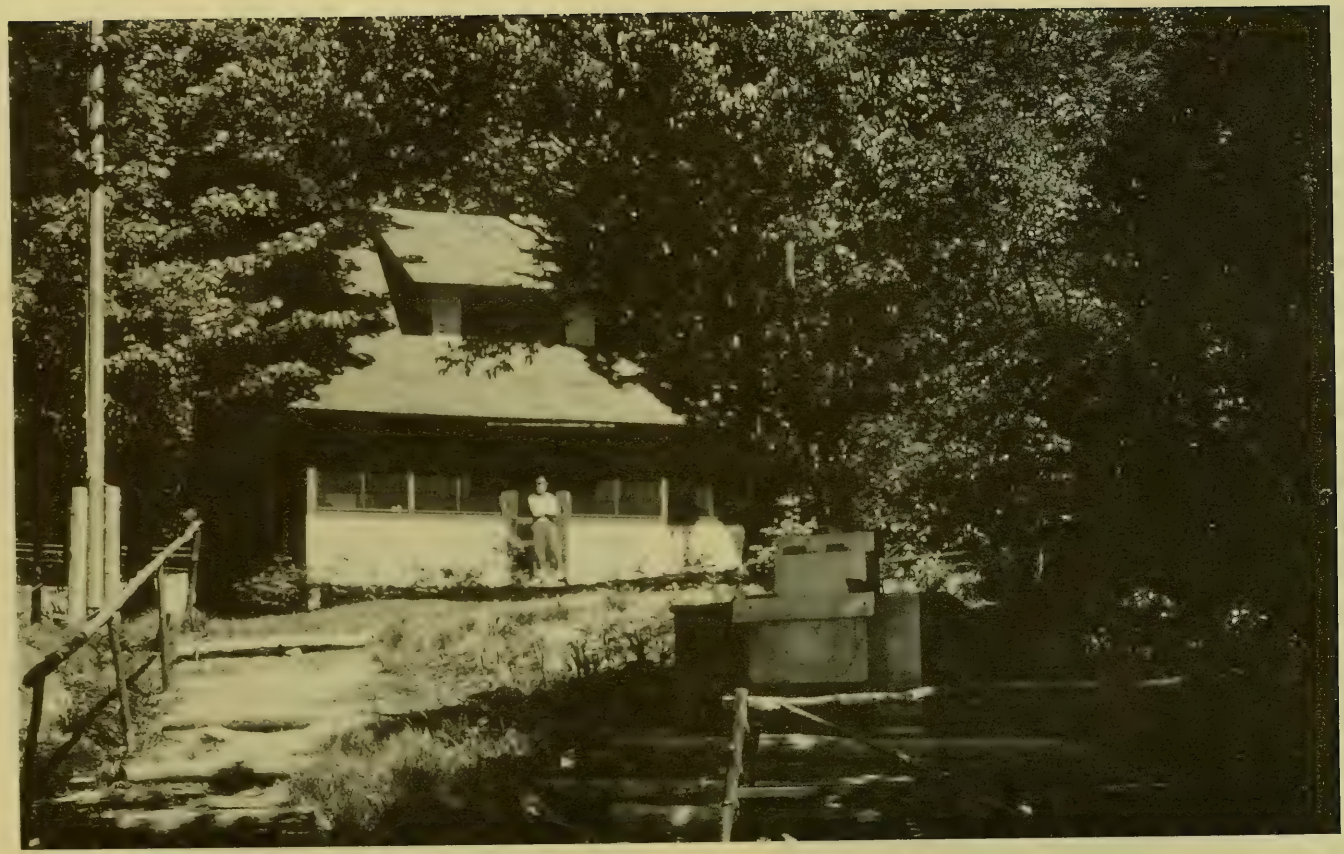
Aunt Maurine's first husband, Harry Mercer, whom she married soon after graduating from high school, was from Pittsburgh, Pa. Following graduation, she went to Pittsburgh and landed a job in a large department store, Kaufman's. She met Harry Mercer and married him about 1921/22; inexplicably, he committed suicide a short time into their marriage. Maurine returned home and attended Fredonia Normal School in the mid-1920's where she received her teaching certificate,

Clyde and Olive (Beebe) Payne about 1900

Maurine Payne about 1920

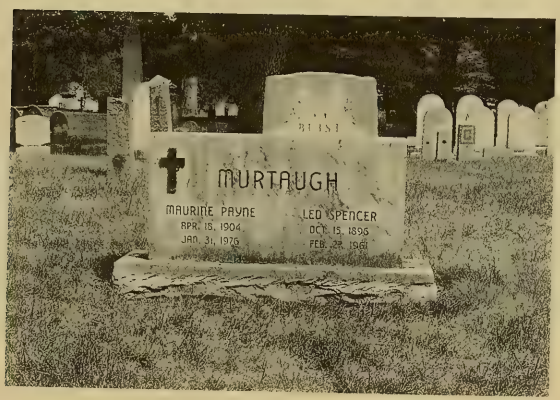
Marshall and John Payne about 1915

Wedding pictures of Maurine Payne and Leo Murtaugh about 1930.



The Murtaugh summer home on Fourth Lake of the Fulton Chain of Lakes in the Adirondack Mountains in the mid-1950's. Peggy Payne stands at the door.

St. James Episcopal Church, Hyde Park, N.Y.



The Murtaugh graves in the cemetery behind St. James

Four generations—from left to right, Maurine Payne, Clyde B. Payne, Imogene Young-Payne-Burnham and John Young. Circa 1906.

then moved to Hyde Park, New York, and began teaching school. At Hyde Park, she met and married Leo Murtaugh about 1930/31.

Somehow, during the days preceding and during World War II, Maurine and Leo became acquainted with Franklin and Eleanor Roosevelt, participating in functions held at the Roosevelts' Hyde Park estate and on the Val Kill Picnic Grounds. Before The United States was drawn into World War II, Maurine and Leo were also involved in fund-raising events. When the United States entered the conflict, they frequently entertained at their home members of the 240th Military Police Battalion, stationed at Hyde Park to guard President Roosevelt. It was sort of a "home-away-from-home" for Battalion members.

In one of Eleanor Roosevelt's newspaper columns, *My Day*, dated 1949, found in my Mother's scrapbook, The First Lady said,

> ". . . On Sunday I went to meet a group from the old 240th Battalion of Military Police, which was stationed here during the war. They came first to my husband's grave and then we went to Mrs. Murtaugh's house in Hyde Park Village. Mr. and Mrs. Murtaugh were always in the forefront of anything the community did for the Battalion while they were here and Mrs. Murtaugh says the men have never forgotten and have always kept in touch with her."

Episcopalians as far back as I can remember, Aunt Maurine and Uncle Leo were regular churchgoers. Whether at Hyde Park

or on Fourth Lake in the Adirondack Mountains, they would attend Sunday service. At Hyde Park, their home church was St. James Episcopal Church, where the Roosevelts attended when in town, and when Aunt Maurine and Uncle Leo were in the Adirondacks, they attended St. Peter's-by-the-Lake. This was a small, rural Episcopal church, open ten Sundays during the summer, that you entered by boat. An article and pictures can be found in the July 18, 1955, *Life* magazine, showing Maurine and Leo pulling up at the Church's boat-dock to attend a Sunday Service. Soon after Peggy and I were married, we helped transport several kneeling cushions to this small church by boat. (The cushions had been at the Hyde Park Church, and were being replaced by new ones.) We were very impressed, knowing these were the "Roosevelt" cushions!

In February of 1961, we were quite saddened to receive word that Leo had suffered a heart attack and had died at home in Hyde Park. Soon after, Aunt Maurine moved to Florida. There she met Laurence Codner, married him, and after a few years of marriage, Aunt Maurine died, leaving me with many pleasant memories of those things touched fifty years ago, in what often seems like a life in another world—a world I now recognize as *Youth.*

79. MARSHALL FRANK (Gen. XV, No. 79), b. 13 April 1908, Cassadaga, N. Y. d. 7 March 1975, Erie, Pa. My Father and direct-line descendant. See Chapter XVII.

80. John Burdette Payne (Gen. XV, No. 80), b. 31 December 1911; d. m. 1/w Norma Briggs, 19 October 1935; b. 5 November 1910, Cleveland, Ohio; dau. of Edward and Grace (Rogers); she d. 2 October 1980, Manatee Hospital, Bradenton, FL.; bur. Cassadaga Cemetery;

m. 2/w Doris (Newell) Nichols, b. 5 December 1927, m. 15 April 1981, at Bradenton, FL. John B. and Norma had two children:

a. Nancy Louise, b. 18 October 1938, Jamestown, N.Y.; m. Richard Bouquin 6 August 1960; Richard b. 8 October 1934.

Children:

i. Jean Marie, b. 23 Sept. 1961; m. Kenneth Everett; no ch.; m. Andrew Charles Hoyt; 3 ch.: John Vincent, b. 8 August 1982; Ashley Nicole, b. 20 May 1984; Brian Andrew, b. 1 December 1985.

ii. David, b. 30 April 1963; m. Bridget Grioux, b. 28 May 1962; 3 ch.: David John, b. 25 July 1980; Crystal Jean, b. 28 July 1982; Tiffany Ann, b. 25 September 1985.

b. John (Jack) Briggs, b. 9 July 1945, Jamestown, N.Y.; m. Jean Schleder, 19 June 1964; Jean b. 18 September 1946.

Children:

i. Marshall, b. 12 October 1964; m. Frances Ferrari; 22 May 1986; she b. 2 January 1964; 2 ch: Jacqueline, b. 12 December 1986; Rebekka, b. 9 October 1990.

ii. Angela, b. 6 October 1966.

iii. Kimberly, b. 19 December 1971.

Another of my favorite persons was my Uncle John, who around 1940 provided me with my first left-handed fishing reel! It was a gift I treasure to this day. In the summer of 1992, I had the pleasure of talking with Uncle John at his home in

Bradenton, Florida, about his memories of his growing-up years in Cassadaga.

Uncle John was the second son and third child born of Clyde and Olive (Beebe) Payne, at 152 Maple Avenue, the Payne home in Cassadaga, N.Y., which was also the birthplace of his sister, Maurine, and older brother, my father, Marshall.

My Uncle John (Gen. XV, No. 80) consented to a tape-recorded session, and what follows is a verbatim narration of his recollections:

"I went to what used to be Cassadaga Union School. That was its name when I graduated from it. Before this time it was called 'School House No. 6'. I remember when I was in seventh grade, about 1926, they had to do some construction on the school, and we had to go down to the Grange Hall while the construction was taking place.

"Mother and Dad put no pressure on me to make good grades. In fact, my Dad didn't think much of school. He didn't have more than a third-grade education, himself, although he was 'worldly smart'. He did attend a one-room school located at Burnhams on the golf course road. Burnhams was a separate community at the time.

"Before my time, Ace Burnham had a race track about where the Cassadaga Pumping water station was at Burnhams.

"After I graduated from high school, I went to Syracuse University, but I never finished. I was in my second year. I don't remember the circumstances exactly, but I came home for some reason. Dad became sick and needed help, and I never went back.

"I was never a particularly good student, I was so darn busy playing ball and having fun.

"Mother probably had the greatest influence on my life. I learned by her example. She was strong, but never over-bearing. My Dad was quite quick-tempered, but he would get over it quickly. I always thought that Mother had a great influence over Dad because she was strong. She was a good person —she never had much religion, but she had a lot of 'Christianity'.

"Mother played the piano, I can remember that. I took piano lessons, violin lessons and drum lessons. I can't carry a tune in a bucket! At that early age I took piano lessons from a teacher that had such bad breath I finally left and would not go back!

"I guess I did the normal chores of most boys my age during those early years, and getting the milk across the road from Frank Miller was one chore I remember having. I also remember that Uncle Claude hired me to cut brush on the Lily Dale tract of land opposite the boat livery. You know, I don't think he ever paid me for that job! I also peddled papers, the *Buffalo Evening News*, and worked in the store down at Burnhams.

"I went to Sunday School at the United Brethren Church in Cassadaga, but it never made much of an impression on me. A priest asked me one day if I ever went to Church. I said to him, 'You know, you can worship those maple trees across the street if you want to, if it makes you a better man.' He looked at me and said, 'I don't know but what you're right.' I can remember him looking right at me and saying that.

"My Dad bought me my first car. I signed a note to him for $500.00. It was a 1927 Chrysler Roadster. This must have been

about 1928 or 1929. It was green with a rumble seat in it—a really good little car. Of course it was second-hand, and had belonged to Pearl Richardson.

"At about this time I started working for Dad at the station. He would pay me about $10.00 a week. I was maybe fifteen or sixteen years old. Soon after, I bought a new 1930 Plymouth Roadster.

"My mother always worked, right in the hardware store with my dad. I remember dad delivering hardware with a horse and wagon. The horse's name was Mark. I remember going with dad. Old Mark knew when he was heading for home, and would really move going back! Mom tended store and worked in millinery, but this was before my time.

"During the years of prohibition, my mother was very animated about not drinking. She belonged to the W.C.T.U. Dad liked to kid her about her white-ribbon on the bedstead.

"Electricity came in about 1927. Of course, we had no electrical appliances until then. We had about the first indoor plumbing in the area. Dad put a big tank high in the room and pumped water up into the tank about once a day. We always had a furnace—coal and wood.

"Dad had the second automoble in Cassadaga. A.P. Woods had the first, a Reo, and Dad bought it when A.P. Woods bought a new one.

"The first radios in Cassadaga were owned by my dad, Delmar Fredrickson and Dr. MacBeth. They were bought from the Payne Hardware Store for $325.00 each.

"When I think back to the Depression years and the effect on us, I can't recall much difference. Cassadaga was a farming community, so no one went hungry.

"I don't remember Hoover, but I do Roosevelt. I didn't like him and this was probably because Dad didn't. My mother was a Democrat and my father a Republican.

"Mother did a lot of fall canning. Dad grew a lot of things in his garden, and she canned every year. In fact, when I sold their home, there was still canned goods on the shelves in the cellar. About the only things bought were staples. I can remember mother buying those big bags of flour and it would take care of our needs for a long time.

"I loved to hunt and fish. I caught my first muskie when I was seven years old in Cassadaga Lake. I took my dad's boat out without his approval. I started fishing and got hold of this muskie that was 30" long. I got him in the boat. It was about noon, and I went home dragging the fish behind me. My dad heard the motor boat. We had about the only boat with a motor on the lake. He knew I had it out. After that, I could always take it whenever I wanted to. He didn't say a word. He was like that. If he saw you could do something, he would turn you loose.

"Generally we got new pants when we went to school each fall, and used the older ones to play in. We didn't have too many clothes. My first pants were knickers. Mother and dad always saw we had what we needed.

"I knew Imogene, my Dad's mother, but I had very little to do with her. She didn't seem to like me. She married Hiley Burnham

after Marshall Payne died. We went to her house for Thanksgiving. Her house always smelled like lilacs. Probably toilet water or something. She lived next to the Cassadaga Cemetery. I remember when radio came in, my Dad bought her a radio and I had to put the antenna out. I strung it from the barn to the house. I never knew my grandpa Payne. [Marshall B.].

"I remember Hiley Burnham. Hiley had an old Chevrolet, about 1929. He would get gas at Burnhams, and when he left he would let out the clutch, and the car would jump. Dad said,'He almost jumped across the railroad tracks without touching them!'

"My dad was a good provider. He owned several properties, but lost money on most of them. Dad was a little lax on some things. Getting money due him was one of those things. He used to do a big business in hardware, though.

"The first trains to come through Burnham were both passenger and freight. There were two passenger trains a day and three freight. Many of the freight trains brought oil. They had an oil run, just tank cars. There was a siding next to Fredrickson's lumber mill where gasoline was stored.

"I'm glad I got out of the gasoline business because of the new regulations. I had tanks underground they wouldn't approve today. I had about 100,000 gallons in four 25,000-gallon tanks.

"About the time I came home from Syracuse University, dad had a man working nights. I had been out on a date and stopped by the station. We were open 24 hours a day. The man on duty was drunk. I told dad about it the next morning, and

he fired the guy right away. That's when I started working nights at the station. It was about 1934–35. I worked nights for about a year, then gradually gave up running the station and ran the post office at Burnhams the last four or five years of its existence. Dad went up home every afternoon to nap or go fishing. He wanted this time for himself. About 1940, dad and mother decided to give me one-third of the business. They charged me $5000.00 for it, and the money was taken out of my earnings. About this time dad quit working altogether at Burnhams and didn't want anything more to do with the gas station. They sold it to me for $20,000.00. A lot of money at that time. I paid it off at $500.00 a month. I didn't think much of it, since I didn't have much trouble making the payments. I did $750,000.00 worth of business the last year I was there.

"I had appliances, fishing tackle—I used to sell four to five thousand dollars' worth of fishing tackle, alone. People came from all over to buy my tackle—they would charge it on their credit cards. We sold refrigerators and radios. All sold easily—didn't have to sell them really, they sold themselves. We also built a lube room and a wash room. We had a complete service station.

"We had one of the best stations selling Mobil and Goodyear products. At one Goodyear meeting, as I was introduced to the others, I remember the man introducing me said, 'John is from the smallest town and sells the greatest number of Goodyear tires in this district.'

"We had a lunch counter also—nickel coffee, where you poured your own. People stopped on their way from Jamestown to Dunkirk or Dunkirk to Jamestown for gas, coffee and

donuts. We also sold hamburgs at 10 cents— they were good, and said to be the best in the area. Cigarettes were two packs for a quarter.

"Mobil let contracts to sell to schools and the highway department. We supplied the department from as far away as Cherry Creek, Brockton, Mayville, and Chautauqua. We made three cents profit per gallon sold, and all County trucks were supplied by Payne Supply Company.

"I had a dog named Tray. He was my dog but lived at dad's. He was big, liked mother, and always tried to get on her lap. He was a good hunting dog, and liked to hunt with me or on his own. I got lots of partridge with Tray. He was quite independent, though. We would often go down the tracks hunting, and I would try to get him to go in a certain place, but he only went where he wanted. I'd take him along on dates in my 1934 Chryster Coupe. One thing about it, I'd never have to lock the car with Tray sitting there!"

Uncle John married Norma Briggs 19 October 1935, at the Trinity Episcopal Church, Fredonia, N.Y., with the ceremony performed by the Reverand Charles Campbell, Rector. My dad, Marshall Payne (Gen. XV, No. 79), was the best man.

According to the newspaper account:

> "Luncheon was at the White Horse Inn, then they left for a southern wedding journey." Norma was educated at Miss Beard's School, Orange, New Jersey, and Edith Young's Art School at East Orange, New Jersey.

Crew of a freight train, while stopped at the Burnhams depot, pose with the author. Circa 1934.

The railroad at Burnhams carried passengers and freight. Circa early 1900s.

Clyde B. Payne in his post office and hardware store at Burnhams, New York at about 1915.

Bills Past due subject to sight draft without notice.

POSITIVELY NO GOODS SOLD AT RETAIL.

Wm. IRWIN ARBUCKLE,

WHOLESALE SPECIALTIES.

WOODEN, WILLOW, GRANITE, GALVANIZED & TIN WARE, PAPER, PAPER BAGS, TWINE, BROOMS, MATCHES & NOTIONS, IMPORTER OF FANCY BASKETS

1324-26 PEACH & 102-104 WEST 14TH STS.

No 544 ERIE, PA. Feb. 14 1918.

Ordered by Zahniser Sold to Payne Supply Co.,

Shipped Cassadaga N Y C Burnham, N.Y.

After delivering goods to Transportation Company and taking their receipt for the same "in good condition" our responsibility ceases. Your claim is against Transportation Company.

100	Nest	Value Inv. Mantles	08	8 00
1	Doz.	#16 Ink Tablets		45
2	Only	#88 Vanco Mop Squeezers	2 00	4 00
1/2	Doz.	#35 Buggy Whips	2 40	1 20
1/6	"	Small Galv. Tubs	12 50	2 08
1/6	"	Med. " "	13 75	2 29
1	"	#220 Knit Wrist Gloves		1 90
				19 92

Thanks for your order.

WM. IRWIN ARBUCKLE.

TERMS: 2% 10 DAYS; 30 DAYS NET.
INTEREST CHARGED AFTER MATURITY.

Order Form from 1918, Burnhams Store

On 11 October 1879, a second son was born to Marshall B. (Gen. XIII, No. 75) and Imogene (Young) Payne. He was named Clyde Burdette (Gen. XIV, No. 77), and was born seven years after the birth of his brother, Claude Belmont Payne (Gen. XIV, No. 76). Clyde Burdette was my grandfather and direct-line descendant.

Clyde's father, Marshall, must have been quite successful in business, because when he died in 1913, he owned several properties in Cassadaga, including the store in Burnhams, where groceries, hardware and a fourth-class post office were located. The post office had been in service since 26 January 1881. The first postmaster was John H. Young, the father of Imogene Young, Marshall's wife. Clyde B. Payne was appointed Postmaster of the Burnhams Post Office, 6 May 1913. He continued until the office was discontinued, 31 August 1942.

Gasoline was a new commodity during the early years of 1900. Sales increased yearly for the Payne Supply Company of Burnhams, and in 1921, a new one-pump station was built on North Main Street, or Route 60, in Cassadaga. Four years later, in 1926, two pumps were added. The total rose to three in 1930, and four in 1940, and six pumps were in service when the station was finally sold in 1967. Clyde continued the single operation at Burnhams until 1921, when all but the post office and two gasoline pumps were moved to the new location.

During the late 1930's and '40's, while I was spending part of my summer vacations and occasional weekends at Grandma and Grandpa Payne's home, I stored up a treasured supply of pleasant memories.

I felt sure that Grandpa Payne lived the kind of life others only dreamed about. Grandpa, it seemed, had "retired" early in life, and did only those things he wanted to do. At least, this was the impression on someone whose greatest life experiences up to that point were limited to chasing imaginary Indians through the Cassadaga Hills and fishing for rock bass, perch and punkin seeds on Cassadaga Lake!

Grandpa Clyde Payne was a great story-teller, and had a wonderful sense of humor. Still, his gift for comedy was not malicious or demeaning, but funny and "country" in style. Example: He sent me a postal notice once, in 1941, which read,

"Find enclosed $1.00 for that goofer hide you sent.

—Lum Abner
Pine Ridge"

He could also discuss at length the merits of making "stove pipes" out of woodchuck holes for my Uncle Harry MacCubbin's house when he got married, and when my Aunt Ty MacCubbin stopped in the store before she went berry-picking, she related that Grandpa gave her a pack of Black-Jack gum, and told her to keep chewing it so she wouldn't be tempted to eat the berries as she picked them.

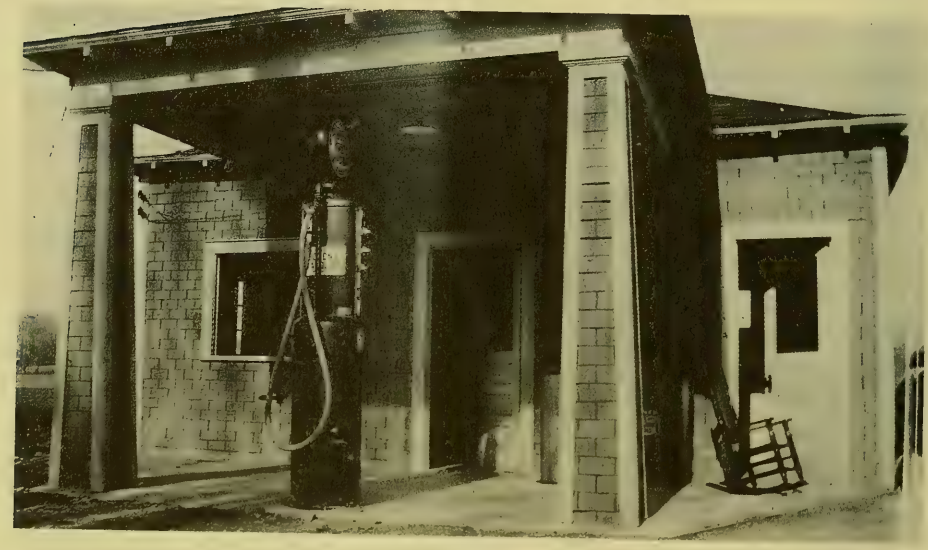
Grandpa had only a third-grade education. We don't know whether he felt the need for more. Of course, relative to the time, and judging by what he could do, he was an "educated" man. Grandpa was an avid reader and learner, and he had better than a modest library of books—most dealing with travel, sailing ships and explorers. His treasures included such books as, *America*, by VanLoon; *It's All Adventure*, by Freuchen; *Book*

of Marvels, by Haliburton; *With Lawrence in Arabia*, by Lowell Thomas; *I Married Adventure*, by Johnson; *Vagabonding Down the Andes*, by Franck; and *My Life As An Explorer*, by Sven Hedin. I can still picture Grandpa Payne as he sat in his chair in the parlor each evening, off on another adventure, eating cheese and crackers, and traveling to some far-off corner of the world with Lawrence of Arabia, or sailing around the world with Captain Joshua Slocum on the "Spray". Many of these volumes are now in my library as reminders of someone who will always be remembered as a gentle old wizard, the kind of grandfather no boy should be without if he can help it.

I thoroughly enjoyed the leisurely pace of life in Cassadaga. My grandparents' home on Maple Avenue was a large, two-story dwelling, painted white with green trim, and featured a screened porch along the front and on one side. It was capped with a tin roof and a fancy cupola at the peak. On a rainy night, I could lie in the old iron bed once belonging to my Dad, and delight in the comforting staccato rhythm played out by the rain on the roof. On the first floor there was a large living area that was separated into kitchen, dining room, parlor and living room. Centered along the front wall in the living room stood a large, floor-model Zenith radio. While Grandma Payne made afghans and Grandpa read in the parlor, I became lost in the radio world of adventure with *Sergeant Preston of the Mounties* and the comedy of *Amos N' Andy*.

Grandpa had a definite dislike for vegetables, never eating any that I know of. But, paradoxically, his large garden behind the garage was his pride and joy! Grandma Payne canned countless jars of vegetables from the garden, stacking them

EVOLUTION OF PAYNE SUPPLY COMPANY



1921

1926

SOCONY GASOLINE

1930

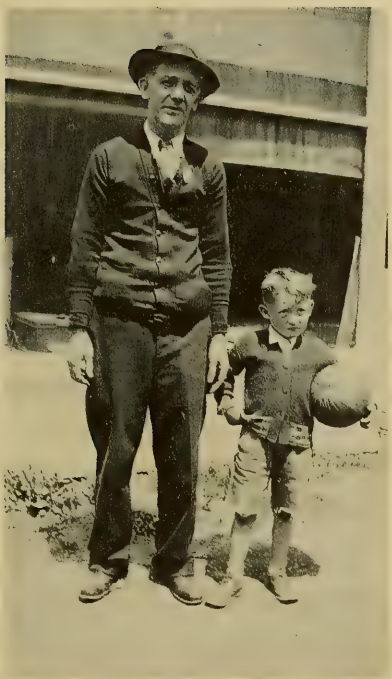
PAYNE SUPPLY CO.
MOBILOIL
MOBILGAS
SOCONY
MOBILGAS

1940

The West Concert band in 1903. This band played for dances at the famed old hall, "Shadyside". My grandfather Payne poses second from the left in the second row.

"Shadyside", an attractive spot on the west shore of Middle Cassadaga Lake. Circa 1894.

Three aspects of the Clyde B. Payne home on Maple Avenue showing the house, 3-car garage, and Grandma's flower garden about 1935.



Grandpa Clyde Payne and the author about 1934.

The children of Clyde B. Payne pose with him in 1965. Marshall, Maurine and John.

neatly away on the shelves in the old cellar just waiting for a family dinner to deplete some of her stock.

Though I never heard him play a musical instrument, Grandpa nonetheless played in a local band in the early 1900's. Picnics, parties and dances were popular at Wood's Grove, located on the shores of Middle Cassadaga Lake. In the center of a virgin growth of sugar maples stood a large, covered pavilion with open sides, used for band concerts, speeches and dances often lasting well into the night. Twice a week a concert band played for dances at Shadyside (on the west side of Middle Lake). Built in 1894, it burned in the 1920's. Madam Vignet owned this property and also the house next to Shadyside, which was a replica of a beautiful French Chateau. It was an auspicious showplace at the time, and Grandpa Payne played horn in the Walter West Concert band that frequently performed at Shadyside.

During those years when Grandpa Payne was Postmaster at Burnhams and I was not yet a teenager, his life seemed to center on listening to New York Giant baseball games, playing cribbage, fishing, pitching horseshoes and on Saturday nights, enjoying bingo with Grandma at the Dunkirk fairgrounds. What more could anyone ask?

Cribbage was played next to the large, pot-bellied stove in the post office with such regular cronies as Christo Fenner (inventor of the Fenner butter churn!), and others of less renown. Most chewed Mailpouch or Redman tobacco, and had gallon cans strategically placed so each "participant" had a target for his necessary expectoration. Some were quite accurate "spitters", while others either had failing eyesight or

were just incompetent. It was this kind of activity that made walking around a bit "iffy". Just the same, the men enjoyed their fellowship and attempts to "skunk" each other on the cribbage board continued for many years. When not playing cribbage and with the weather permitting, they transferred their "skills" to the game of horseshoe pitching aligned next to the railroad tracks at Burnhams. It was a shady location with a nice stand of sugar maples on one side and the D.A.V. & P.R.R. on the other. Of course, an errant toss sometimes ended up with a shoe between the tracks!

In earlier years, along with their father, Marshall (Gen. XIII, No. 75), Claude Belmont (Gen. XIV, No. 76), and my Grandfather, Clyde Burdette (Gen. XIV, No. 77), organized Paynes-Sons Contractors. One of their projects, constructed sometime around World War I, was a seventy-foot chimney for the Pierpont Cider Mill on Lake View Ave. This mill was reportedly the largest plant for the manufacture and sale of cider vinegar in the area. The year I was born, 1929, the cider mill—with the exception of the chimney—was destroyed by fire.

The property was subsequently sold and the mill rebuilt. It continued in operation until 1937, when it was once again destroyed by fire —all but the "Payne" chimney, that is, which continued to stand tall. It was a tribute to good workmanship, I'm sure.

Patience, I am now convinced, I learned from my Grandpa Payne. We sat for hours at our favorite fishing spot on Cassadaga Lake, in his leaky, faded-green rowboat, waiting for crappie, rock-bass, perch and punkin' seeds to nibble on our worms, as we watched the green dragonflys dart about our

bobbing corks. We always kept an extra tin can handy to bail water from the bottom of the boat, so we could keep our feet dry, giving us something else to do while we waited and watched. This is not to say we didn't catch fish, for we did—hundreds, of all kinds and all sizes. But, in between times, we quietly talked and enjoyed the natural beauty and tranquility only a boy and his grandfather can have—alone on a lake, on a quiet summer afternoon.

My grandmother, Olive (Beebe) Payne, was the daughter of Frank W. and Lydia (Fisher) Beebe. Though we never had family reunions as such, we all would assemble each year at Christmas at Grandma's house. It was, of course, Grandpa's house, too, but for some reason I always spoke of it as "going to Grandma's". She was the one who seemed to bring and hold the Payne family together.

Looking back on those times, I remember them as being very exciting, and, for the most part, quite pleasant, with plenty of good food, and with a sort of truce while under Grandma's roof that kept bickering to a minimum.

All of the Paynes had and have strong wills, and all have been quite independent thinkers—traits that caused occasional clashes! But, as I now reflect back on those days, I realize that Grandma had a way of defusing things by just appearing in the room. It was simply a respect that everyone had for her. She could bring all of us back to reality, and her voice was rarely raised in doing so. She owned insight, character and concern, and these were good anchors to hold onto, yet the word, "love" was never mentioned, that I can recall . . . a custom that seems very different from today's society, where it's too

often recklessly thrown about. We spoke little of our feelings, yet there was a quiet understanding, a sense that all was well in our world, as we felt the word and the security it offered.

Sadly, Grandpa died 17 October 1968. The following is his obituary from the Dunkirk, New York, paper, where it appeared two days later.

> "Cassadaga—Clyde B. Payne, 89, formerly of 152 Maple Avenue, died at 4:05 p.m. Thursday in W.C.A. hospital, Jamestown. Born Oct. 11, 1879 in Cassadaga, he was the son of Marshall B. and Imogene Young Payne and had been a lifelong resident of the area. He was a descendant of one of the pioneer families of Cassadaga. His father was the founder of the Payne Supply Company in 1879, and the family has owned and operated the business for three generations. Mr. Payne retired in 1945. His father and his brother Claude B. Payne, who died in 1945, were also stone masons and masonry contractors.
>
> "Mr. Payne was a life member of Forest Lodge 166, A. and A.M., Fredonia, the Jamestown Consistory of Scottish Rite, and was the oldest living member of the Cassadaga fire department. A former member of the Cassadaga village school board, he also served for 45 years as postmaster of Burnhams.
>
> "Preceded in death in 1952 by his wife, Olive Beebe Payne, he is survived by two sons, Marshall F. Payne of Ripley and John B. Payne of Cas-

sadaga; a daughter, Mrs. Maurine Codner of Englewood, Fla.; three grand-children, seven great-grand-children, and two nieces."

CHAPTER XVII

Marshall Frank Payne (Gen. XV, No. 79) and His Descendants

We do not choose to be born. We do not choose
our parents. We do not choose our historical epoch,
or the country of our birth, or the immediate
circumstances of our upbringing. We do not,
most of us, choose to die; nor do we choose
the time or conditions of our death.
But within all this realm of choicelessness,
we do choose how we shall live;
courageously or in cowardice, honorably or
dishonorably, with purpose or adrift.
We decide what is important and what
is trivial in life. We decide that what
makes us significant is either what we do
or what we refuse to do.
But no matter how indifferent the
universe may be to our choices and
decisions, these choices and decisions are
ours to make. We decide. We choose.
And as we decide and choose, so are our
lives formed. In the end, forming our own
destiny is what ambition is all about.

—JOSEPH EPSTEIN

MARSHALL FRANK PAYNE (Gen. XV, No. 79), b. 13 April 1908, Cassadaga, Chautauqua County, New York; d. 7 March 1975, Hamot Hospital, Erie, Pennsylvania; bur. 10 March 1975, Cassadaga Cemetery, Cassadaga, New York; m. Carol Sylvia (MacCubbin), 5 October 1928, at Cassadaga, New York; she was b. 19 August 1908, Sinclairville, New York, as the dau. of William and Lillian (Jones) MacCubbin.

Residence: Cassadaga, Chautauqua Co., N.Y. Lawrence Park, Erie Co., Pa. Wesleyville, Erie Co., Pa. Lawrence Park, Erie Co., Pa. Elmhurst, DuPage Co., Il. LaGrange Park, DuPage Co., Il. Ripley, Chautauqua Co., N.Y. LaGrange Park, DuPage Co., Il. North East, Erie Co., Pa.

GENERATION XVI

Children of Marshall F. (Gen. XV, No. 79) and Carol S. (MacCubbin) Payne:

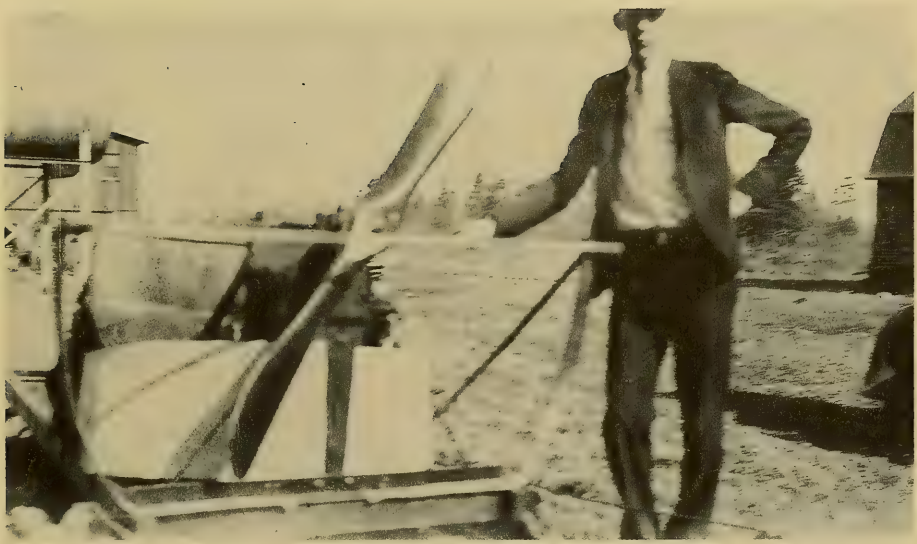
81. Clyde William Payne (Gen. XVI, No. 81); b. 25 May 1929; Dunkirk, Chautauqua Co., New York.; m. Margaret Jean Wasson, 26 December 1953, Beaver Falls, Beaver County, Pennsylvania; she was b. 13 January 1932; dau. of James Leroy and Estelle Evelyn (Brenner) Wasson. Children of Clyde William and Margaret Jean Payne:

    a. Jeffrey Alan (Gen. XVII, No. 83), b. 4 November 1955, Wilkinsburg, Pa.; m. Rebecca Bernice Young, 22 June 1985, Rochester, New York;

Carol S. (MacCubbin) Payne—1924

Marshall F. Payne, 1968

Carol S. (MacCubbin) Payne in 1978



Two snowmobiles built by Marshall F. Payne.
The early model is shown in the top photo and the later model is shown in front of the post office and store at Burnhams in the early '20s.

Rebecca b. 17 May 1962. She is dau. of Ansel and Janet Young, Rochester, New York.

Children of Jeffrey and Rebecca Payne:

i. Christine Anne, (Gen. XVIII, No. 86), b. 28 February 1988, York, Pa.

ii. Stephen Michael, (Gen. XVIII, No. 88), b. 7 August 1993, York, Pa.

b. James Marshall,(Gen. XVII, No. 84), b. 12 November 1957, Wilkinsburg, Pa; m. Cynthia Marie Wagaman, 1 July 1988, York, Pa.; Cynthia, b. 14 October 1957. She is dau. of Margaret and Mello Wagaman, York, Pa.

c. Gerald Scott (Gen. XVII, No. 85), b. 30 January 1961, Wilkinsburg, Pa.; m. Sandra Lee Lofland, 9 May 1987, at Tampa, Fl.; Sandra b. 26 April 1963; div. July 1991; she is dau. of Jimmy and Jane Lofland of Milton, Delaware. Child of Gerald and Sandra Payne:

i. Joseph Scott, b. 16 December 1988, Tampa, Fl. (Gen. XVIII, No. 87).

82. Patricia Lee Payne (Gen. XVI, No. 82); b. 6 June 1937, Hamot Hospital, Erie, Pa.; d. 8:00 A.M. 26 August 1937; bur. Cassadaga Cemetery.

The year I was born, 1929, was the year my dad, Marshall Frank Payne, graduated from the General Electric Apprentice Course, a program that helped to launch a career for him in 1926, at the age of 18, and ended with his retirement more than forty-one years later.

By any standards, my Dad was certainly an exceptional man. Extremely talented in so many ways, he could do anything he put his mind to, or so it seemed to me. And he *did*, from dismantling and rebuilding an automobile to building a boat, and a "snowmobile" (long before that name was ever given to such a vehicle), to constructing a house from the bottom up. I suppose I was always in awe of his talents, and perhaps even intimidated, since I felt that those kinds of gifts were not passed on to me. Perhaps what I've heard is true—that talent often skips a generation.

Three years before his death in 1975, He wrote a letter to my sons that seemed to capture—partly through dreams and partly through philosophy—the stuff of which successful people are made:

> "Dear Boys,
>
> "While in a book store in Florida I saw this book and thought it gave me an excuse to relate to you some of the things I had dreams about at your ages. At the same time to give you a few thoughts of what I call 'growing-up'.
>
> "There are some people that never do become responsible. I suppose it is a matter of degree of ambition. When a person gets lazy or is not

interested in learning new things that is about the level of a life he will live. It is always good to learn something new each day regardless of what field it is in. The things that are hard for you to do should be the ones to tackle. You will not learn much from doing things that you know how to do or things that are easy for you. Never be satisfied to be average. As you get older you will be as good as you think you are, and as you will find out, a better life becomes very competitive.

"I had two desires, things that I really wanted to do at your age. One, I wanted to build and drive a race car in the Indianapolis 500, and second, to own and direct a large band. There were many large bands in the 20's and 30's and most were very successful.

"It was possible, as you will see by reading this book, that race cars were mostly built by individuals taking a standard automobile such as a Model-T Ford and interchanging parts, cylinder heads with head valves, underslinging parts, high tension magnetoes for ignition, different carburetors and gears to change gear ratio. I did this to a Model-T, 1914 Ford. I built my own body for the car. A few people did this who had garage facilities available to them.

"I was fortunate in certain respects. My father had a country hardware store with a tin shop and a fulltime tin smith. In conjuction, he sold builders'

supplies. Later, about 1914, he opened a garage selling Model-T's and parts. We also, in the same building, had a fourth-class post office with one rural mail carrier. This was at Burnhams, New York, about one mile from Cassadaga.

"After World War I, my Mother and Father bought property on the highway at Cassadaga, which at that time was the main route between Buffalo and Jamestown, N.Y. They built our first gas station. With the two places they installed their own railroad siding and started buying gasoline by tank car. Up to this time most gasoline and oils were delivered by horse and wagon in five-gallon cans. I worked in the gas station after school each night and on the weekends drove the tank truck to fill up the tanks at the gas station for the week. I was fourteen/fifteen years old and this experience has helped me all through life.

"Sometime I will try and write more, but did want you to know that regardless of all plans you make fate plays a great part in your life, and as your Grandmother will tell you in one of her favorite sayings, 'Everything comes out for the best,' and I know you will.

"Grandad"

Thanks to Mother's conscientious devotion to maintaining daily log notes and filling volumes of scrapbooks with family-related newspaper clippings and pictures over a period of many

Four generations of the Payne family gathered together for the wedding of Richard Bouquin and Nancy Payne in 1960. From left to right: Marshall F. Payne (Gen. XV, No. 79), Leo Murtaugh, Carol (MacCubbin) Payne, Maurine (Payne) Murtaugh (Gen. XV, No. 78), Norma (Briggs) Payne, Richard and Nancy with Jeffrey A. Payne (Gen. XVII, No. 83), Jack Payne, John B. Payne (Gen. XV, No. 80), Margaret (Wasson) Payne, Clyde W. Payne (Gen. XVI, No. 81), and Clyde B. Payne (Gen. XIV, No. 77).

years, I have been able to trace my parents' travels and experiences on an almost day-by-day basis. Indeed, most of the information included in this narrative was found in her notes and scrapbooks.

When Dad graduated from the General Electric Apprentice Program in 1929, he wrote an essay that was printed in the *General Electric News*, October 18, 1929. His article offered a compelling insight into his appreciation for those who helped him succeed, and told of his pride in both his own ability and the company for which he worked.

> "The following is an essay written by Marshall Payne who was graduated from the machinist-toolmaker course on August 5, 1929, and is now in the Tool Room, Bldg. 5.
>
> "An education is one of the most important problems in a person's life. It is hard to decide just what you want to do, but in this day and age there is no need of a young man wanting for an education with the vast opportunities at hand.
>
> "The apprentice course, I believe, is a very good example of a sound foundation for success.
>
> "Now that I have completed my apprentice course, my aim will be, a better position with more responsibility.
>
> "My intention is to attend the Technical Night School course; taking this with my experience in the shop and my school work during my

machinist-toolmaking course, I think that I ought to be fitted for a better position than the average fellow.

"It is the tendency of the young men of today to find employment which brings quick financial returns. This is where so many make a mistake and realize it when it is too late. In that kind of employment, a man does not have a future to look forward to. He is not sure of high compensation or of future progress.

"The apprentice course of the General Electric brings a person in contact with some of the most skilled mechanics, efficient designers, and engineers. Working with these men, you receive special training which cannot be acquired in a good many schools.

"I can well remember my first days in the shop. Everything was new to me. I wondered if there was anything that the General Electric could not build. I can now appreciate the patience that the instructors showed. They have such young men as myself to deal with every day. There is always someone who is new.

"I will never forget the first job I completed. I felt proud of it and have tried to maintain the same spirit throughout my apprenticeship.

"In my experience in the different departments I worked in while on the course, I find that I was

handicapped a little by blue print reading. I know a good many other boys are bothered in the same way. If a special class were added to the course on the reading of blue prints, I think it would help reduce mistakes and be a benefit to everybody.

"I realize a good many boys do not show much interest in what becomes of them when they complete the course. They take whatever day rate is offered and continue on in the same old rut, but I know there are a few like myself who would like to be able to answer the question, if asked — 'What do you intend to do when you finish and what will be your average earnings?'

"Now that the early part of August marks the completion of my course, I want to thank all of the men who have helped and advised me during the past three years. They have all been equally patient and ready to help a fellow at any time.

"I hope that in the years to come I will be able to prove to the General Electric the benefit I have derived from my course."

There is no doubt that he succeeded in this endeavor. Dad's life, as with the lives of most of us during our most productive years, centered mostly on his career with G.E. and Hotpoint. His "spare-time", such as it was during those frantic years of World War II, was spent catching up on many hours of sleep lost while working long hours of overtime at the "shop".

His early years, after serving on the apprentice course, were spent in the toolroom of Building #5, and in Building #42 working in the refrigerator cabinet division. Dad was promoted to Foreman—Refrigerator Unit Reconditioning in 1933. His skill can be seen in the fact that when GE switched from wood to steel cabinets for its early refrigerators, Dad built the first welding machine for the cabinets.

In 1934, a freak, almost fatal accident occurred while he was working in Building #42.

As my Dad fell from a ladder, a splinter became embedded in his leg. Though he went to the plant infirmary, blood poisoning developed, and he was sent to Hamot Hospital in Erie. We were told that his chances for recovery were 50–50, but after several weeks of hospitalization, he did recover, with nothing more noticeable than a scar.

The happiness derived from the birth of a daughter, my sister, was realized 6 June 1937. Patricia Lee entered this world at 6 lbs. 6 oz. But a catastrophe loomed! Tragically, due to an obstruction in her stomach—a problem now easily correctable—Patty died 26 August 1937. I can recall the great sorrow of this time in our family life. The death of a child is especially devastating, and I feel certain that the sadness remained a permanent part of our world. Patty's obituary, dated 30 August 1937, follows:

> "The funeral of Patricia Lee Payne, infant daughter of Mr. and Mrs Marshall Payne of Erie, Pa.,was held Saturday afternoon at the home of the grandparents, Mr. and Mrs. Clyde Payne here,

the Rev. William Jones officiating. Burial was in the Cassadaga Cemetery.

"Those attending from away were Mr. and Mrs. Marshall Payne, Mr. and Mrs. Krause, Erie, Pa.; Mrs. Leo Murtaugh, Poughkeepsie; Mrs. Mrs. Howard Austin, South Dayton; Mr. and Mrs. H.F. Salhoff, Mrs. William Judson, Mrs. Edward N. Button, Mrs. Mary Hall, Mr. and Mrs. David MacCubbin, Mrs. Herman Goulding, and Mrs. Kenneth Goulding, Fredonia."

During my early years, my "growing-up" years, Dad talked to me about everything and anything that came to his mind. His commentaries were triggered, I now presume, by some frustration that may have confronted him. Though Dad and I had many differences of opinion, he nonetheless regarded me as a thinking person, and because he did, so did I. "Think for yourself!" I heard more than once, and it was probably the best advice I could have received. I saw him then as a tall, 6'3", imposing figure of authority and competence, which made me wonder how his employees saw him. On the job, he was a leader—strong, assertive, loyal, fair and driven. When he demanded the best from everyone, it took me some time before I realized that I was included. As strong as he often appeared, frequent headaches caused him no end of pain and discomfort, and stomach problems often interfered with his enjoyment of those things he should have enjoyed. Perhaps the qualities that described him best—discipline and iron self-control—were also those that interfered with his ability to relax and accept things that were beyond his control.

From his parents a child learns what a human being does, and what it means to be one. A father, by example and by instruction, does what he can to prepare his son to take his place in the world. In later years, I came to realize what Dad had tried to do for me, and, without even knowing it, what I was trying to do for my sons (though hopefully, in a less demanding and more patient manner).

Perhaps a sense of my Dad's strength and loyalty on the job can be seen from the following excerpts from letters sent him by two colleagues.

1963

". . . Not too many people in the past have tried too much on one of Marsh Payne's boys—knowing that meant tangling with him, also. I would like to continue to feel I am still one of Payne's boys.

Sincerely,
Tom."

From General Electric, Australia in 1964:

"Dear Marsh,

I have long believed that such managers as you were possible, but it is a remarkable pleasure to have met and talked with one. Your article in Iron Age magazine has been copied and distributed widely at our plant. If I achieved nothing else, the introduction of your philosophy will more than justify the trip.

Very truly yours,
D.A. Lyman"

In 1936, Dad was transferred to the Locomotive and Car Equipment Department. His work in this division was mainly in the field of wage payment and planning. From 1942 to 1944, he was Head of Wage Payment and Planning—Marine Turbine, and from 1944 to 1945 held the same position in the Turret Contract Section. During these war years, the employees of the Erie Works of GE set a record of never having a single gun mount rejected or returned for repairs—for the four-year period during which they were made there.

In 1948, Dad was promoted to Superintendant of the Freezer Divison of the General Electric Co., Building #63, Erie Works. In 1950, he was made Superintendant of the Refrigerator Cabinet Division, Building #18. This was a sizeable responsibility, with some five-thousand employees under his supervision. It was also about this time, during the early 1950's, that Dad—never content to sit and dream about what might be—built a beautiful, two-story home at 4110 East Lake Road, in Lawrence Park, Erie, Pa. Pouring concrete, laying block, construction, plumbing, electrical work—all seemed to be as natural for him as eating or sleeping. He could do it all. Each night and every weekend found him working on the house—Erie's foul, winter weather was ignored.

When the house was completed in about 1951, while I was in the service, Mom and Dad moved into this beautiful new home, built with so much care and skill. This was the first home that our small family had owned. Up until then, and while I was growing up, our lives had been focused in a small,

rented, brick row-home, so typical of those found in factory towns, at 3621 Main St., Lawrence Park, a suburb of Erie.

One never knows what tomorrow will bring, much less five or ten years down the road—but three years later, in 1954, Dad was offered a job with the Hotpoint Company in Chicago, Illinois. The opportunity came at a time when the Refrigeration Division of General Electric was being moved to Louisville, Kentucky. Dad had a decision to make, and chose to sell the new home and go with Hotpoint in Chicago. On 1 July 1954, he was appointed Manager of Manufacturing, Refrigeration Division. Their first home in the Chicago area was a large ranch-type dwelling in an area called Timber Trails in Elmhurst, Ilinois. In 1960 they moved to a home in LaGrange Park.

These were very productive and exciting years for Mother and Dad. As an executive with a major manufacturing company, he was able to do many of those things that he had worked so hard to achieve. Dad and Mother traveled around the country, and once hosted a group of colleagues and their wives on a trip to Mexico. He made several fishing trips into northern Canada, and took me along on two of them. Dad collected a sizeable number of antique guns. For many years, he and mother attended the Kentucky Derby at Lousiville, and was made an Honorary Kentucky Colonel 13 August 1956.

Through these years, Dad received many awards and much recognition of outstanding performance for himself and the Hotpoint Company. A particularly bright spot was a fifteen-year expansion program begun with the completion of Dad's appliance factory in 1958.

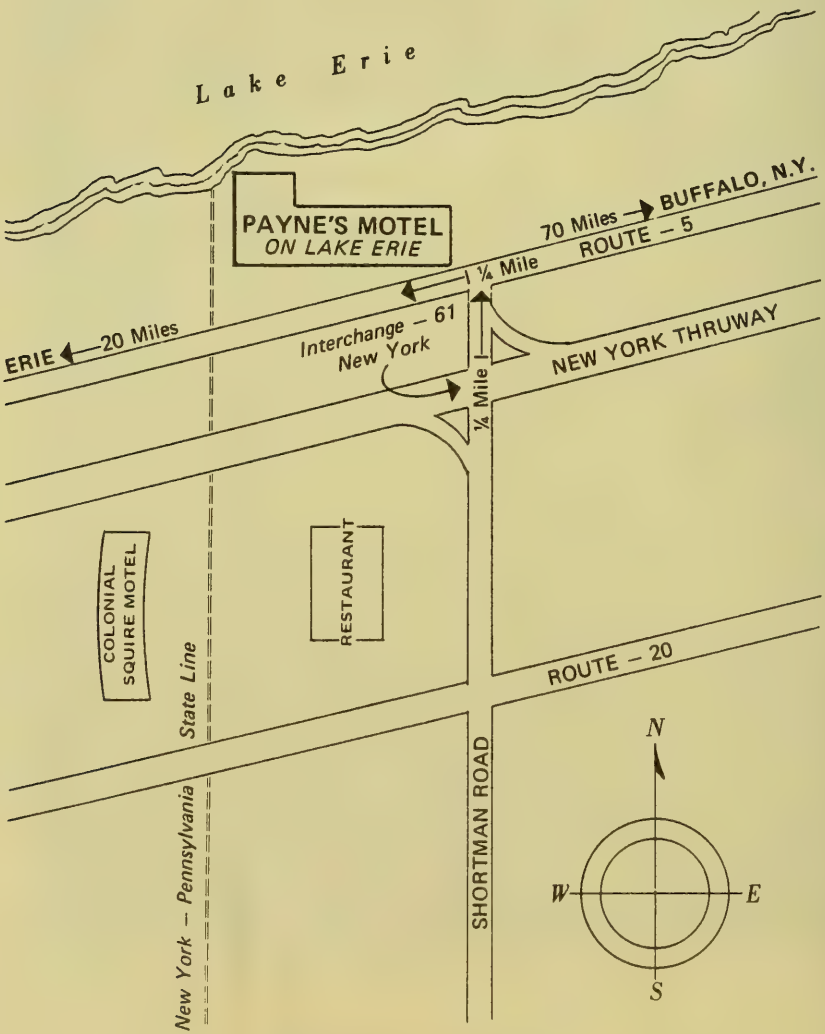
The home built by Marshall F. Payne at 4110 East Lake Road, Lawrence Park, Erie, Pennsylvania in 1950.

PHONE, RIPLEY, N. Y.
736-4845

MARSH AND CAROL PAYNE
MGR. AND OWNER

Payne's Motel
On Lake Erie

LOCATED — N. Y. AND PA. STATE LINE ROUTE 5
WEST LAKE ROAD RIPLEY, NEW YORK 14775



Map locating Payne's Motel

We were very proud of his accomplishments during his tenure with the General Electric and Hotpoint companies. I believe he was, too. All individuals are entitled to outstanding leadership, and I know he provided this for those working for him.

On 1 July 1968, Dad retired from the Hotpoint Company after thirteen years of service.

In 1967, the year before Dad's retirement, he and Mother decided to return to the familiar hills of western New York State. They bought a small (8-unit) motel with a beautiful, very old, two-story home on about four acres of land. The property adjoined Route 5 on the shores of Lake Erie, at the state line of New York and Pennsylvania, at Ripley, New York. In the beginning, it was thought to be just the right size, but before long, property maintenance became a fulltime job. In addition to the work required in maintaining the units each day, four acres of yardwork, such as mowing and trimming, consumed a great amount of time, allowing little of that freedom usually sought by those in their retirement years.

A year or so after a mowing accident that resulted in the loss of three fingers on Dad's left hand (an experience that devastated him), Mother and Dad decided to sell the motel and return to Chicago. As noted earlier, one of Dad's hobbies was collecting antique guns. He accumulated an extensive collection over the years, starting in the 1950's. So, each time a move was made, in addition to home furnishings and other personal possessions, the guns needed to be re-packed and crated. This became increasingly more difficult, since Dad constructed the crates, packed the guns in them, and transported them cross-country in a homemade trailer.

On 11 June 1971, they moved back to Illinois, into a stone home at 801 N. Brainard Ave., LaGrange Park, a suburb of Chicago, where they had previously lived. Hoping to find Chicago as it was when he had worked there, Dad suffered when he found that things were no longer the same. Many former friends had retired or left, and many of those remaining were now merely acquaintances. Life had moved on, and recapturing what had been was no longer possible. It was not "home" as they had remembered it, and obviously this was a real disappointment.

So, once again, Mom and Dad decided to return to the east; this time to the town of North East, Pa. In January of 1974, after several trips there to look at houses, they decided to have one built. On 1 April 1974, after once again packing up all of their possessions, they moved four hundred miles into their new home at 84 Delaware Ave., North East, Pennsylvania. I can't help but feel this move contributed to the escalating health problems that plagued Dad, for he and mother had only one more year together before his death on 7 March 1975, of congestive heart failure.

From the EVENING OBSERVER, Dunkirk-Fredonia, N.Y. 8 March 1975:

> "Funeral services for Marshall F. Payne, 66, of 84 Delaware Ave., North East, Pa., formerly of Cassadaga who died March 7, 1975, were held at 11 a.m. Monday in the Jordan Funeral Home, Sinclairville. The Rev. David P. Foulk of the Cassadaga Community Baptist Church officiated. Burial was in Cassadaga Cemetery. The bearers

were William Josephson, Walfred Josephson, Almet Josephson, David England, Daniel A. MacCubbin and Harry MacCubbin. Attending from away were Mr. and Mrs. Clyde W. Payne and son of York, Pa.; John B. Payne, Bradenton, Florida; Daniel A. MacCubbin, Rochester; Mrs. Sandra Snyder, Bridgeport, Ohio. Surviving are his wife, Mrs. Carol MacCubbin Payne; a son, Clyde W. Payne of York, Pa.; three grandsons; a sister, Mrs. Maurine Codner of Englewood, Fla.; and a brother, John B. Payne of Bradenton, Fla."

In January of 1973, on a trip to Bradenton, Florida, Mother and Dad had decided to purchase a home in Heather Hills, a mobile home community. This proved to be the perfect decision, since it provided Mother with a home that would be in a warm climate, and yet small enough to easily maintain. Following Dad's death, Mother sold the home in North East and moved to Florida. She remained there for thirteen years, when, for health reasons, it became increasingly more difficult for her to handle everyday chores. In order to be nearer her family and receive assisted care, Mother came to York, Pennsylvania, and entered the Autumn House, a retirement home, on 11 October 1988.

My mother, Sylvia Carol (MacCubbin) Payne, who was known everywhere as "Carol", not "Sylvia", was the second of six children born to William and Lillian (Jones) MacCubbin, in Fredonia, New York, 19 August 1908.

On 3 February 1992, a taped conversation with Mother while she was living in the Autumn House provided the following narrative.

"We moved to the town of Ellery Center a year or so after I was born. Since I was quite young and only lived there for a short time, I have few memories of it. One thing I do remember, was that our house was 'banked'. This was when they packed straw all around the base of the house to keep out the wind and hold in the heat.

"I can also remember living there one winter. Bill, my older brother, and I were playing outside. A little dog came along, grabbed my white stocking cap and ran away with it! It's funny the little things you remember.

"Our family moved from Ellery Center to Sinclairville, New York, to an area called 'Cob Hill'.

"Our house was located on quite a steep hill. One day, Bill and I decided we would go to Grandpa Jones' house, which was some distance down the hill. We both got into his wagon and down the hill we went. I remember there were trees on both sides, and people living along the way watched us 'fly' down the hill. When we got to the bottom, we just got out of the wagon and walked back up. I gues we were scared, but I don't really remember that. The trip down made quite an impression, and seems as plain as day! I guess we didn't go on to Grandpa Jones' house.

"We lived in two different places on Cob Hill. The one in the middle of the hill was when I started school. I remember arithmetic was hard for me. I had a great deal of trouble with it, and had to work hard. I got a report card once, and I had passed arithmetic! I was so happy, and ran all the way up the hill to the house to find Mom. I was so tickled! When I showed

her my card, she was so matter-of-fact about it. I guess she expected me to pass. She didn't seem impressed at all, and sent me back to school. It's funny, the things you remember.

"We never had far to go to school. We always lived fairly close. We never could take our lunch because we lived too close to home. We all wanted to take a bag to school so much and sit with the other children. Once when Mom was away, we did pack our lunch and did get a chance to eat with the others. I was so excited!

"Dad never put pressure on us to make good grades, but Mom was good to help us with our work. Sarah and Bob used to come down so Mom could help them. Sarah was my cousin and lived across from us. We grew up together, and we were best friends. It was always Sarah and Carol—Carol and Sarah.

"Sarah and I were always together, which was great for me. Sarah was a little older, probably about Bill's age. But whenever she wanted to go anyplace, she asked me to go along. We would walk along and she would always put her arm around my shoulders. No wonder I didn't grow, I was so short! But she was great. Uncle Dave and Dad were brothers. Aunt Amah was Uncle Dave's wife and Sarah was their daughter.

"The house on Dutch Corners, by the creek, where we next lived, had a cement wall that came up from the creek to the side of the house. I can remember, and have a picture of Sarah and I sitting on the top of the wall, and my sisters, Maxine and Babe, sitting on the lower part.

"We did have some chores to do. We always had to do the dishes. We never could go right to school until we had them

all done. I liked school and didn't like this one bit! We also had to make our own beds and do some other chores which I've forgotten.

"We seldom had new clothes. We used to get clothes from our cousins. These were hand-me-downs, but were very nice. I think we always looked nice when we went to school. Of course Mom made most of our clothes. She had to because we had very little money. We didn't buy many, and it was always quite a treat when we could.

"Sarah played the piano, and I remember she played and we both sang. When I was about 10 years old we sang and played at a Grange meeting in the Grange Hall in Sinclairville. One of the songs we sang was 'At Dawning.' We really enjoyed performing!

"Christmas at our house was always fun. Things were simple and gifts were few. The one Christmas I remember most was at a time when Dad was not working. Dad was a good man, kind, but too fond of alcohol, and couldn't hold a regular job. Aunt Amah and Uncle Dave and Sarah made Christmas for all of us. They brought us a Christmas tree, and we decorated it with stringed popcorn and colored paper loops that we made into chains. I only remember one gift and it was the only thing I wanted, a candy-striped hair ribbon. I was so happy! I'm sure we probably got some other gifts to unwrap, but I don't remember them. I do remember the tree—its beautiful decorations and my hair ribbon.

"In the winter we liked to 'catch on' to the cutters of a horse-drawn sleigh. You could put your ropes around the cutter supports. I remember Bob MacCubbin and my sister

Babe trying to catch a ride one day. Bob got the rope around the cutter and then Bob fell off with Babe still on the sled holding on to the rope! When Babe and the sleigh got to the top of the hill, she let go. I was scared watching this happen! I went in to tell Mamma. I don't remember exactly what I said, but when we both came out of the house, here comes Babe, walking down the hill with her sled as unconcerned as she could be!

"When we lived in Sinclairville we went to Sunday School every Sunday. I can remember getting up each Sunday morning, going out to the woodshed and polishing our shoes. That was one thing we did every Sunday morning. We seldom missed. We went to the Methodist Church. It was on one side of the street and the Baptist Church, where Sarah attended, was on the other.

"I felt good about school. I remember a girl in my class, Carolyn Fessenden. If anything was to be done the teacher would seem to ask one of us. It always seemed to be either Carol of Carolyn.

"When we were in 6th grade we couldn't wait for 7th grade because we got to go upstairs! Seventh and 8th grades were upstairs.

"In the back of the school was a plot of ground that was all ploughed up so we could have gardens. Anyone who wanted a garden was allowed to have one. These were good times for us around the First World War.

"I remember Momma taking Sarah and I to Jamestown on my birthday—probably about my 11th birthday. We were standing on the platform waiting to take the train from James-

town to Falkner to go home. Sarah said, 'Aunt Lillian, isn't that Victor over there?' Sure enough, it was her brother, just coming home from the war! This was sure something, seeing him.

"I was scared to death Dad would be called to war. Everybody said he wouldn't, though, because he had such a big family. But, I was still scared he would be called up.

"In school I remember people bringing clean pieces of cloth. We would sit, while the teacher read to us, and cut the cloth into little pieces to make pillows for the soldiers.

"Dad wired the second house we owned—the house on Cob Hill. This was our first electricity, and happened sometime in the 1920's. It was very exciting!

"On Dutch Corners the toilet was in a small room in the upstairs. There was no way of flushing it like we do now. We had to pour a pail of water in to flush it into the creek next to the house.

"We had running water in Sinclairville on Dutch Corners. I can remember turning the faucet on by climbing on a chair. We never had a pump that I can remember. To get hot water, we boiled it in a tea kettle. To wash clothes, we would bring in a long bench by the sink and put three tubs on it. We would fill these tubs, then filled a boiler to boil the clothes. We used a stick to stir them in the boiling water. When you think of it, with a bunch of kids, it must have been hard for Mother and Dad. I can still see Mom scrubbing those clothes.

"I remember a brand-new Majestic range we got. It was nice. This was for cooking and heating the kitchen. We had a coal

stove for heating. It was nice, putting your stocking feet on the stove to get them warm. There was no heat upstairs. All the heat for upstairs came from the pipe that went from the stove downstairs through the roof. It was really cold winters, and we sometimes took a heated, wrapped flat-iron to bed to help keep our feet warm.

"To get up to the bedrooms, you had to go out into the hall and climb the stairs into the cold rooms. Dad cut an opening in the living room in the house so we could undress by the coal stove and then go upstairs. He put a door in it to keep the room downstairs warm. Many years later we went over to Dutch Corners and looked through the windows of the empty house. It looked so small, and we saw the door that Dad had cut.

"For entertainment, before radio, we would sing. I remember Mom would be out in the kitchen and she would be working on something. Dad would be holding one of the babies, and rock in his chair and sing. The rest of us would sit around the big coal stove in the living room and we'd all sing.

"Dad at one time worked for the Borden Company. There was a milk plant in Cassadaga, down at Burnhams. Everyday there would be teams and teams of horses pulling wagons of milk. Dad's job was to 'clean the pan.' I didn't know what 'cleaning the pan' meant at the time, but, in later years, I went to the condensery and found out. The 'pan' was a great big kettle that held the milk. He had to get into it and 'clean the pan'.

"Aunt Mary, Dad's sister, had something to do with getting us to Cassadaga. She seemed to be the only one who could straighten Dad out after he had been drinking. Mom would

always have to get Aunt Mary Hall. He and Uncle Dave liked to drink, but for some reason, only Dave would be able to go to work the next day—Dad couldn't. Everybody liked Dad—there was never a better man in the world than Bill or Will—as he was often called—MacCubbin, but he liked to drink. He couldn't be trusted on the job, so he had trouble holding one.

"Our first house in Cassadaga was a beautiful big one located right on Main Street. It belonged to Uncle Amos and Aunt Mary. They let us live there for a while when they moved to Fredonia. They still owned the house. When they finally sold it, we had to move out. It was such a beautiful, big house with many bedrooms upstairs. I don't know how many, but I know I was scared to go to bed at night!

"When I started school in Cassadaga, I first went to the Grange Hall. They were just building the school on Main Street and used the Grange Hall until the school was finished. We were then living on Mill Street in Cassadaga. We lived there a while, then that house was sold, and we moved down to one across from the Cassadaga Cemetery—the Fenner place. Marshall and I were married in this house. From there we moved to Burnhams, next to the Payne Hardware Store and Post Office. Our next move was just down the street, across the tracks in Burnhams. I believe I was gone by that time.

"After Marsh and I were married, we bought Mom and Dad their first radio. It was an Emerson, and Dad was so tickled! He listened to all the old programs—*Mert and Marge* and all the others.

"The only movies we went to were shown at the Grange Hall every once-in-a-while. About the only place you could go on a

date was to the movies, then to someone's house to play cards. Marsh ran the movie machine most of the time at the Grange. It cost twenty-five cents to see a movie.

"I met Marsh right there in school. A good friend of mine, Lucille Harrison, and her future husband, Dick Matoon, wanted someone to go out with Marsh, so they asked me. Marsh was the only one with a car and he drove it to school, so I usually got a ride home.

"We were always in a depression in those days. I didn't finish high school—I needed one more year. I had to quit because we needed the money. Neither Bill nor I finished school. I worked up at Ames' Drug Store, behind the soda fountain. I would open up at 7:00 a.m. and close at 9:00 p.m. I must have been about fifteen or sixteen. I was lucky to get a job at that time. We needed money for food, so Bill and I both worked. I remember buying Mom a new coat. She had worn an old brown coat for years, and I bought her a new blue one. It was so pretty, and she really liked it.

"It was fun working at Ames'. I remember that one day each June, Ames would have free ice-cream cones for all children—everybody came! We were very busy summers, because Lily Dale was open. I was paid twenty cents an hour when I first started. It wasn't too long before I was making twenty-five cents. The first thing I ever bought with my money was a Kodak camera for $5.00. I suppose there were things we needed more, but when you are young you don't think about that. I still have that camera in my trunk!

"I never went back to school to graduate. I remember an old song that was out in those years before I was married. It

was called, *I've Been Around the World, But Never Went to School.* But I guess I turned out alright."

As we concluded our taped interview, and I asked Mom if she had any regrets, she was quick to reply, "You know, whenever anyone asks this, I answer immediately—no! Of course we all have little things we've said or done that we wish we hadn't—and probably would change if we could—but I've had a great life and family and really wouldn't change a thing." She was, indeed, fortunate.

So now, as the 20th Century wanes, and as we continue to ponder what the future holds for us, we can marvel at the human condition—the mysterious destiny that bonds our past with our present. Relationships are irrevocable; but each of us, in his or her assigned generation, has been offered opportunities.

The ancient Greeks had a word for such destiny, "Moira", which describes the "human fate" that comes to each of us. And yet we are also free to choose much of what we become, and free, especially, to decide the meaning and the value of our lives.

Like the rest of us, Carol and Marshall Payne—my parents—made their best efforts to choose what they could . . . and to accept and endure the sometimes glorious, sometimes tragic legacy that goes by the name of "The Human Condition".

In that way, their story is *our* story; their lives are part of the shared, seamless garment that clothes us all.

EPILOGUE

Immortality

Do not stand by my grave and weep. . . .
I am not there. I do not sleep.
I am a thousand winds that blow.
I am a diamond glint on snow.
I am the sunlight on ripened grain.
I am the gentle autumn rain.
When you awake in the
morning hush, I am the
swift upflinging rush of quiet birds' circling flight.
I am the soft star shine at night.
Do not stand by my grave and cry . . .
I am not there.
I did not die.

—AUTHOR UNKNOWN

In the end, the stories are what define us. If you walk the ancient Cassadaga Cemetery in New York on a summer afternoon, you'll find the names of those stories printed on rows of stone.

Here, where several generations of Paynes enjoy their final rest, the wind flutters the green sugar maple leaves, and yellow

butterflies cruise the shadows of approaching twilight. And the names of the stories flicker from the granite, calling to the visitor, haunting him, and demanding to be told. . . .

And in that telling, something endures.

That's why this author decided, several years ago, to return to the "foreign country" of the past . . . and to trace out the lives of the generations who shaped the vast saga that goes by the name of *Payne*.

That chronicle—like every other human story—is full of turmoil, and struggle, and blood. For many of our ancestors, the journey was short, uncertain, wracked by illness and despair. But when I focused the telescope of history on these lives, I also found numerous examples of courage, daring, and tenacity.

I found a world full of people who burned with affection and ambition for the families they tried to raise.

I learned about some amazing human beings who lived life for all it was worth, through hard times and good. They took the world as it came to them. They changed with the changing seasons; they endured both their tragedies and their triumphs with a stoical grace.

They celebrated their pride in a family heritage that reached back centuries.

Stories!

Describing the vital importance of these family sagas, Charles Lafayette Todd, the author of *The Sittin' Stone*, remembers

how the famed autobiographer Alex Haley ("Roots") once gave him some crucial advice: "Man, every family has a story to tell, and a place where it all began. Tell it like it was, and it will be good for your soul!"

These are words to live by, and in writing this volume, I've tried to find the spiritual nourishment that Haley described.

It's rather puzzling . . . when you realize that so many genealogical research projects consist of little more than listings of names and dates bound together by a numerical coding system. But I wanted something different: Early in the development of this family history, I decided I wanted to create a document that would do more than list names and dates.

I wanted my readers to learn something about the flesh-and-blood ancestors who shaped the Payne clan.

I wanted to feel—and to share with others—the smells and tastes and sounds and sights of the worlds from which we came.

Whether it was a great sailing ship plunging through the North Atlantic storm, while its passengers quaked with fear . . . or a smiling woman baking pungent bread at the hearth of a New England cabin . . . or a small boy battling a largemouth bass on a 20th-Century lake in western New York State, I wanted the reader to *feel* the story of the Paynes.

Of course my own feelings about the mystery of our family's journey through time grew deeper and richer with each passing year of labor on this project—until, in an amazing *finale* that capped the entire process perfectly, I went back to the two tiny English villages where the entire saga had begun.

It happened during the last week of September 1993, when Peggy and I were driven by a local guide through the almost-magical kingdoms of Tenterden and Frittenden. We spent half a day wandering through rural Kent County, where the two villages, located about eight miles apart, have loomed over the rolling countryside since the days of the Romans and the earliest Saxons.

Led by our skillful tour guide, Mr. Warwick Stanley, and an able driver (Mr. Mike Land) who turned out to be quite a local historian, himself, Peggy and I gazed in astonishment at the scene before us. As we cruised the narrow, spiraling roadway through gentle hills of clay and chalk and sand, we were struck again and again by the vision of these tiny villages, where policemen still rattle about on ancient-looking bicycles.

Punctuated by the traditional, cone-shaped kilns designed for drying hops that can be found along almost every roadside, this enchanted region has been dominated for a thousand years by its profoundly moving churches.

At Tenterden, we stood transfixed before the Gothic beauty of St. Mildred's Anglican Church. At Frittenden, a few hours later, we caught our breaths beneath the stately, Norman-style tower that provides the architectural signature for St. Mary's.

How can mere words convey the hovering sense of mystery, of timeless Providence, that seemed to shroud these two houses of worship, there in the two villages where the first Payne ancestors first saw the light of day?

We could almost *feel* the past moving around us, as we strolled over the well-manicured lawns and around the

trimmed shrubbery that flanks stately old St. Mary's. How sharply the crumbling gray tombstone of the churchyard seemed to contrast with the emerald of the lawns! Were those stones "growing" out of the lush, green carpet of grass . . . or did it only seem that way?

Looking more closely, we soon noticed a major difference between this English burying-ground and the one at Cassadaga: These names could not be read, since the weather of centuries had long ago eroded the lettering to invisibility. (But no matter: The official parish records left no doubt that the first five generations of Paynes had lived in Frittenden, and that many were, indeed, buried right beneath our feet.)

Burning with curiosity, we were eager to learn how Tenterden had historically been a larger village than Frittenden . . . and to read a description of the former in the *Dover Express* of 1909:

"Tenterden's main street is remarkably wide, consisting of five sections, two footpaths, two varying widths of greenward, in which are full grown trees, and the carriage road in the centre, the whole varying in width at different points, but in some places the whole is 150 feet wide. The houses are remarkable for their variety: some are modern and well built, others are quaint black and white structures of the Jacobean period. Most of the houses constituting workmen's dwellings, in side lanes, are made of wood; nearly all the modern ones are of brick, and there is scarcely a structure of stone, except the Church, which is built of stone of all sorts."

One especially interesting footnote to this saga emerged when we discovered that, for some reason, Moses Paine (Gen. VI, No.

28) had been baptized at St. Mildred's in Tenterden. Why his father, Nicholas (Gen. V, No. 16), decided to stage the ceremony in Tenterden rather than Frittenden remains a mystery.

In addition, we learned that Moses' first two wives had been buried in St. Mildred's Church ceremony at Tenterden—leading us to believe that Moses was a member of St. Mildred's before leaving for the great journey to America in 1638.

As you might imagine, our ramble through these two charming villages left us gasping with fascinated delight, after exploring the locales that had been home to six different generations of Paynes.

Then, just as we departed, there came a magical moment: We spotted a small sign jutting from a post, on the road that led out of Frittenden. It read: "Payne Land Farm". Moments later, we found another sign, marked "Bubherst" . . . a name that had appeared in John Payn's will (page 21)!

Although we found ourselves yearning for more time in order to study this extraordinary landscape in more detail, there was no doubt that we'd accomplished our main objective: We had a first-hand look at the family's ancient origins.

Struggling with this lengthy project for several years, I had dreamed incessantly of finding a way to "connect" the past of Tenterden/Frittenden with the lives that had later unfolded in the tiny villages and the rolling, rural farmlands of the American northeast—long before the freeways and the "bedroom communities" and the shopping malls and the fastfood palaces arrived to wipe out the distinction between country and city in the America we know today.

A Payne family picture taken September, 1993. Seated l. to r. Carol (MacCubbin) Payne, Rebecca (Young) Payne holding the latest member of the family, Stephen Michael, Christine Anne, Peggy (Wasson) Payne. Back row l. to r. Gerald, Joseph Scott, Cynthia (Wagaman) Payne, James, Jeffrey and Clyde Payne.

Now that connection has been made.

And in the end, I saw that history would have to contain a *hundred* different histories, whether set in New York or Pennsylvania or the mellow hills of England's Kent County . . . a hundred different stories of Payne family members battling their way through the long journey from Frittenden, to Braintree and Ashfield, Massachsuetts, to Cassadaga/Stockton in New York, and then on to Pennsylvania and Florida and a dozen other locales.

I wrote this book so that our grandchildren and great-grandchildren of the future will be able to carry on this family research, and to sustain the pride we take in the past, present and future generations of Paynes.

But most of all, I wrote to tell the stories.

Go take a walk in the Cassadaga Cemetery on a summer afternoon, and you'll see what I mean.

The leaves rustle softly, and the green dragonfly lights on the windblown twig. And the names call to us, flicker from the granite, like stories waiting hungrily to be told.

And telling them is when you finally understand:

Something endures!

—Clyde William Payne
1993

INDEX

Abner, Lum 216
Adams, --- 83, 115, 118
  Abigail 115, 116
  Eleazor 75
  Elizabeth 76
  Henery 83
  Henry 74, 75, 76, 88
  Jasper 75
  John 75, 76, 83, 115, 116, 125, 141, 144
  John (Mrs.) 133
  Joseph 111, 141
  Moses 76
  Peter 90, 116, 140, 144
  Samuel 75, 76
  Thomas 83, 104
Ager, William 105
Ahaton, Benjamin 124
Alden, John 115
  Priscilla 115
  Ruth 115
  William 194
Alis, William 83
Allen, Joseph 140
  Samuel 140, 142
  Thomas 155
Allin, --- (Deacon) 89
  Joseph 90
Allis, --- (Deacon) 91
  William 96
Ames, David 110
  Eliza Etta 165, 167
  Samuel 165
Amhurst, Jeffrey 148, 151
Anawasanauk 92
Anawassanauke 93, 94, 95, 96
Annible, Edward 160
Appliby, William 13
Arnold, --- 83
Atherton, Jonathan 104
Austin, Howard 233
Baldwin II, King of Jerusalem 5, 8
Barrett, John 104
Bas, John 112
  Joseph 112
  Samuel 112
Base, --- (Deacon) 91
Bass, --- 83
  --- (Deacon) 91
  David 140
  Hannah 109, 110, 113, 114
  John 90, 115
  Samuel 109, 114, 115, 116
Basson, Winter 152
Bauer, Louise A. 185
Baxter, --- 83
  Benjamin 151
  John 141
  Samuel 140
Bayley, --- 113
Beal, Benjamin 90
Beall, John 90
Becket, --- 23
Beckwith, Elisha 165
Beebe, Abel 168
  Frank 202
  Frank W. 220
  Olive 202, 204A, 208, 220, 221
Belcher, Gregory 92, 142
  Joseph 122, 124
  Moses 140
Benison, John 73

Mary 58, 73, 74
Bennet, John 104
Bennett, John 104
Berbek, George 103
Beurnett, Will (Mrs.) 195
Bezbeech, Mary 54, 58, 61
Bichols, Doris 207
Bigelow, Anna 157
Billings, Anna 148, 164, 168, 169, 171, 172
Hannah 114
Robert 114
Roger 113, 114
Sarah 114
William 114
Birch, Joseph 104
Bishop of St. Davids 13
Black, --- ('Cap') 193
Blackstone, William 79
Bouquin, Crystal Jean 207
David 207
David John 207
Jean Marie 207
Richard 207, 228A
Tiffany Ann 207
Bracket, Joseph 90, 151
Moses 150
Nathan 140
Brackett, --- 83
Nathaniel 96
Peter 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97
Richard 82, 83, 129
Brackitt, --- (Capt.) 91
Bradford, --- (Major) 103
William 78, 80
Brattle, --- (Capt.) 101, 102
Thomas 100, 103
Will 153
Braunt, Caleb 103
Brenner, Estelle Evelyn 224
Bridge, Matthew 125
Briggs, Edward 206
Norma 206, 214, 228A
Brooks, William 124
Brown, William 124
Browne, Thomas 105
Buchorn, --- 31, 33
Buckhurst, Martha 40
Bunker, Jonathan 126
Burdon, Alice 40
Burnham, Ace 208
Ashel 188
Charles 190
Hiley 211, 212
Hiram 184B, 188, 189, 190
Marshall B. 184C
Button, Edward N. (Mrs.) 233
Campbell, Charles 214
Cardot, Ellen 177, 185
Carpenter, Agnes 184
Jennie 195
Carter, Caleb 125
Castle, John 51
Castleyn, John 51
Caxton, --- 35
Chaucer, --- 22
Chessman, George 144
Chevers, James 104
Church, Othello 168
Samuel 104
Clark, John 124
Clayville, Olive 175, 177, 177A, 179, 180, 181
Cleare, --- 76
William 76
Cleaverly, Thomas 151
Clement V, Pope 6
Cleverly, John 89, 140
Codner, --- 222
Laurence 206
Lawrence Edgar 202
Colborne, Elizabeth 106
William 106
Colburn, Elizabeth 76, 105
Mary 76
William 76, 77, 107
Colet, --- 23
Dean 22
Collier, Elizabeth 74
Conquerer, William the 2
Conqueror, William the 7
Cooledg, Stephen 125

Cooper, Charles 165
Couchman, Jane 32, 39, 40
  Robert 39
Crane, Ezekiel 141
Creswell, Thomas 125
Cridington, Isaac 159
Croften, Anne 58, 59, 60
Crofton, Anne 54
Crosby, Joseph 140
Crosbye, Joseph 90
Culliver, Samuel 124
Curtis, Moses 90
  Theophilus 111, 113
  William 152
de Payen, Edmund 7, 8
  Hugh 3, 5, 6, 8
de St. Omer, Godfrey 5
Denison, Daniel 99
Derby, Clayton 198
Dinely, Fathergon 124
Doggett, Richard 25
Druse, John 125
Dudley, Joseph 110
Dudlow, --- (Mr.) 114
Dunster, John 125
Edmons, Thomas 126
Edmund of Hampshire 4
Edward IV, King 35
Edward V, King 35
Eliot, John 96
Elizabeth I, Queen 56
Elliot, --- (Cornet) 101
Elmer, Laura 164, 165
England, Carl 184
  David 239
  David F. 185
  Paul 184
Erasmus, --- 22, 23
Erdle, Ernest 195
Everett, Kenneth 207
Fairbank, Jonathan 124
Faxon, --- 83
  Richard 150
Faxson, Richard 140
Felix Indian 124
Fenner, Christo 218
Ferrari, Frances 207
Fessenden, Carolyn 243
Field, Ebenezer 145
  William 140
Fisher, Joel 168
  John 194
  Lydia 202, 220
Fiske, --- (Rev. Mr.) 85
  --- (Rev.) 135
  Moses 130
Flavel, John 117
Flynt, Henry 134, 135
Ford, Richard 34
Foster, Elisha 104
Foulk, David P. 238
Fowle, Marian 40
  Zechariah 105
Francis, Richard 104
Fredrickson, Delmar 210
French, --- 83
  Adam 150
  Benjamin 150
  Dependance 90, 111
  Elizabeth 13
  John 90, 111
  Joshua 150
  Nehemiah 150
  Samuel 90, 150
  Thomas 90, 140
Fullager, --- 40
Gay, Jotham 153
Gibson, John 125
Gilbert, Jonathan 105
Gill, John 122, 124
Gittings, Mehitable 147, 148, 149, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 158A, 159, 160
Goble, Thomas 124
Goulding, Herman (Mrs.) 233
  Kenneth (Mrs.) 233
Great John 92, 93, 94, 95, 96
Green, Jonathan 151
Grioux, Bridget 207
Grover, Paltiel 104
Haliday, Myra A. 178
Hall, --- 178

Amos 246
Mary 233
Richard 104
Hallowell, Benjamin 151
Hancock, --- (Rev.) 135
Harrison, Lucille 247
Harry Indian 124
Hassey, --- (Lt.) 102
Hastings, John 125
Hayden, Nehamiah 124
Nehemiah 90, 111
Rachel 133
Samuel 90
Hayward, --- 83
Hannah 118
Jonathan 140
Joseph 150
Mary 118
Samuel 115, 118, 151
Heinden, Ebenezer 104
Henchman, --- (Capt.) 101
Daniel 121
Henry IV, King 13
Henry VII, King 25
Henshaw, Joshuah 104
Thomas 126
Hill, Alice G. 184
Alvin T. 184
John 106
Hobart, --- 83
Peter 140, 141
Robert 112
William 152
Holbrook, --- 83
Hollbrook, David 144
Hollis, John 150
Holyday, John 132
Horton, David 152
Howard, Nathaniel 124
Hoyt, Andrew Charles 207
Ashley Nicole 207
Brian Andrew 207
John Vincent 207
Hubbard, Nathaniel 142
Hubert, Elizabeth 55, 63
Henrie 55, 63
John 55, 63
Nathan 55, 62, 63, 64
Sara 55, 63
Hubortt, Caleb 111
Hudson, Charles 148
Hull, John 89
Robert 13, 88
Hunes, --- 91
Hunt, --- 83
Bethiah 116
Daniel 140
Ephraim 150
Jackson, Jabes 124
Nicholas 33, 34
Jacob, --- (Capt.) 75
Jacob of Natick 93
James Indian 124
Jeremie Indian 125
Johnson, --- (Capt.) 123
William 193
Jones, Ephraim 141
Lillian 224, 239
Josephson, Almet 239
Walfred 239
William 239
Judson, William (Mrs.) 233
Keayne, Robert 89
Kene, Jams 82
Kent, William 104
Ketchfden, William 24
King, John 177, 180
King William 8
Knopp, William 193
Krause, --- (Mr.) 233
Lamb, John 111
Joshuah 104
Lambard, William 41
Lefted, Thomas 25
Legaree, Daniel 143, 144
Leonard, Thomas 104
Lincoln, Banjamin 148
Benjamin 151, 153, 154
Livermore, John 124
Lofland, Jane 225
Jimmy 225
Sandra Lee 225

Look, Hannah 148
Jeremiah 148
Susanna 148
Lyman, D. A. 235
Lyon, Mary 156
Nathan 159
MacBeth, --- (Dr.) 210
MacCubbin, Amah 242
Babe 243
Bob 242, 243
Carol 228A, 241, 243, 254A
Carol S. 224A, 224B
Carol Sylvia 224, 248
Daniel A. 239
Dave 242, 246
David 233
Harry 216, 239
Lillian 190C, 244
Mary 245, 246
Sylvia Carol 239
Ty 216
Victor 244
William 190C, 224, 239, 240, 241, 246, 247
Mallory, Amarylis 165
Vesta 167
March, --- (Rev.) 135
Marsh, Alexander 83
Joseph 118
Mascall, John 40
Richard 40
Robert 40
Mason, John 105
Massasoit 98
Matoon, Dick 247
Matson, Thomas 83
Mattison, James O. 188
Maxfield, Samuel 105
Meger, Jennie O. 177
Mekins, Thomas 92
Mercer, Harry 202, 204
Meriam, John 41
Mesmer, --- (Dr.) 193
Metacom 98
Metacomet 98
Miller, --- 189
E. 130
Frank 209
James 124, 125
Phinn 195
Mills, John 88, 89, 91
Moran, --- (Dr.) 193
More, James 152
Thomas 22, 23
Morlyne, Gervace 40
Mosely, --- 122
Samuel 121
Murtaugh, Leo 204C, 228A
Leo (Mrs.) 233
Leo Spencer 202, 203, 204, 205, 206
Nameconont 96
Namsconont 92, 93, 94, 95
Neal, Benjamin 112, 141
Joseph 144
Neale, --- 83
Abigail 120
Abijah 120
Benjamin 119, 120
Deborah 119
Henery 83
Henry 120
Jerusha 120
Jonathan 120
Lydai 120
Neall, Joseph 112
Needam, William 91
Needham, John 104, 124
Nepsachuit 102
Newcomb, Ebenezer 138
Jonathan 90, 138
Richard 138
Sarah 138
Newell, Doris 207
John 104
Newman, --- (Mr.) 103
Nightingal, Joseph 140
Nightingale, Hannah 118
Joseph 115, 118
Samuel 118
William 112
Niles, --- 83

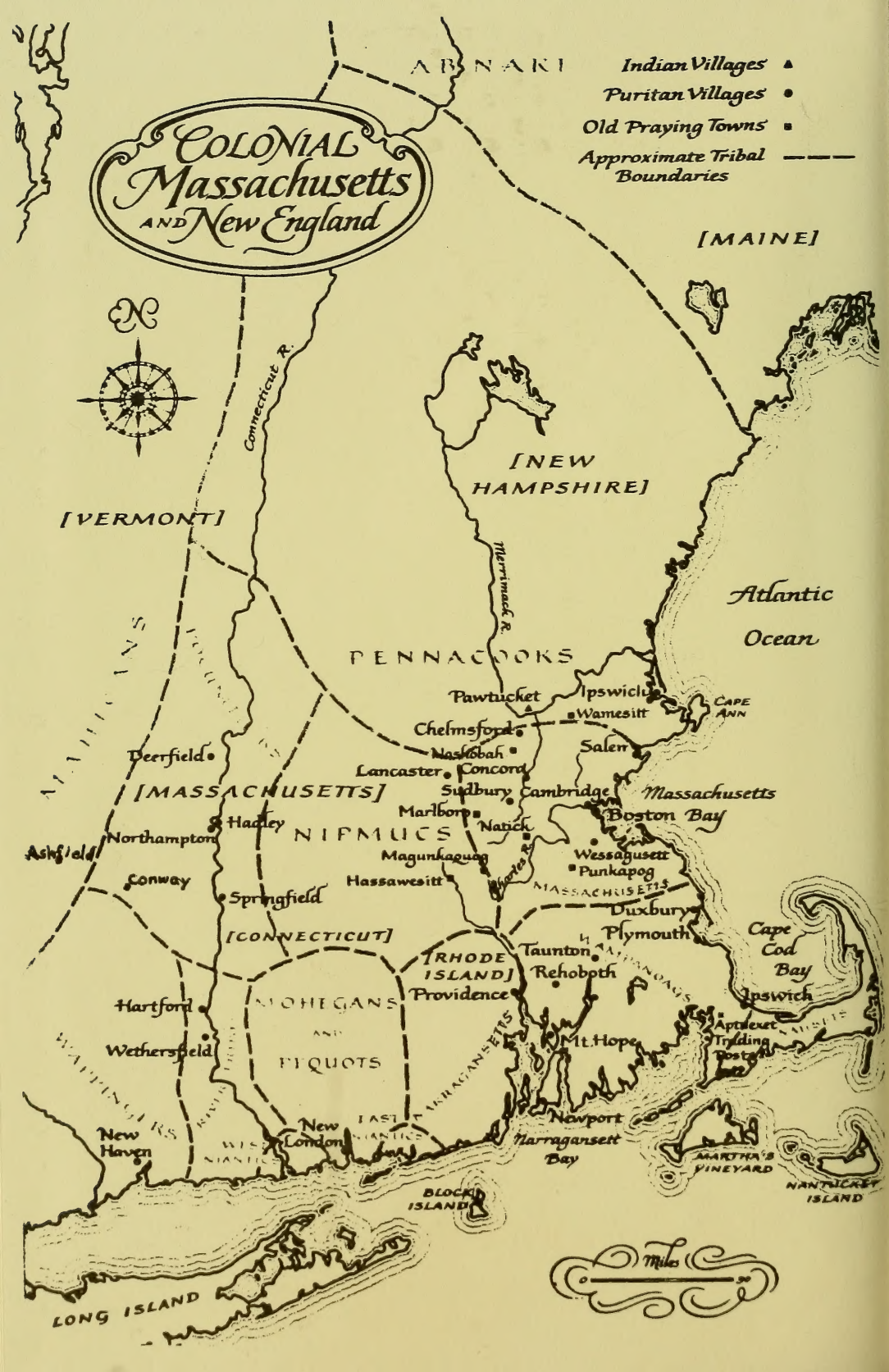
John 152
Noyce, John 152
Nucom, Peter 111
Samuel 111
Oakes, Edward 110, 122, 124, 125
Oaks, Charles R. 176
Old Max 195
Oliver, Thomas 124
Page, Richard Lynn 185
Robert H. 185
Roberta Lynn 185
Pagen 8
Pagen of Domesday 3
Pagen of Hampshire 4
Pain, Enoch 133
Moses 58, 144
Nehemiah 134
Rachel 134
Samuel 134
Paine, --- 83, 148
--- (Dr.) 5, 7, 8
Aaron 116
Abigail 115
Albert W. 3
Asa 148
Benjamin 110, 119, 158
Bethiah 116
David 116
Deborah 119
Ebenezer 138
Eleanor 138
Elener 148
Elizabeth 74, 75, 76, 77, 79, 87, 88
Ellen 130
H. D. 13
Hannah 77, 110, 113, 115, 116
Jacob 138
John 58, 77, 119
Joseph 110, 119, 148, 155, 156, 159, 160
Joseph Ruggles 138, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 158A, 159, 160
Lucina 158
Lydia 77, 110, 119, 120
Margaret 77
Mary 77, 106, 107, 110, 115, 126
Mehitable 110, 111, 148
Moses 13, 60, 67, 71, 73, 74, 76, 77, 79, 83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 97, 100, 101, 102, 104, 105, 106, 107, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 126, 131, 165
Nicholas 86, 131
Rachel 110, 138
Rebecca 77, 106
Samuel 110, 111, 113, 115, 130, 137, 138, 145, 148
Sara 77, 114
Sarah 76, 77, 106, 107, 113, 115, 138, 158
Seth 119
Stephen 77, 79, 80, 84, 87, 88, 89, 101, 102, 105, 109, 110, 111, 113, 114, 115, 119, 120, 121, 124, 125, 126, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 152
Susanna 148
Susannah 138
T. O. 4
Washington 158
William 77, 106, 107
Paison, John 103
Pares, Judith 74, 85, 86, 87, 88
Parker, Will D. 198
Parmenter, Joseph 89, 140
Parmiter, Joseph 124
Pawlak, --- 185
Payn, --- 20
Agnes 12, 13, 15, 17, 20
Edmund 12, 15, 16, 17, 20
Edmunde 24, 26, 27
Elizabeth 12, 16, 20
Godleve 20
James 20
Joane 15, 16
Joanne 11, 12, 17
Johanne 19, 20, 22, 24, 25, 26, 28

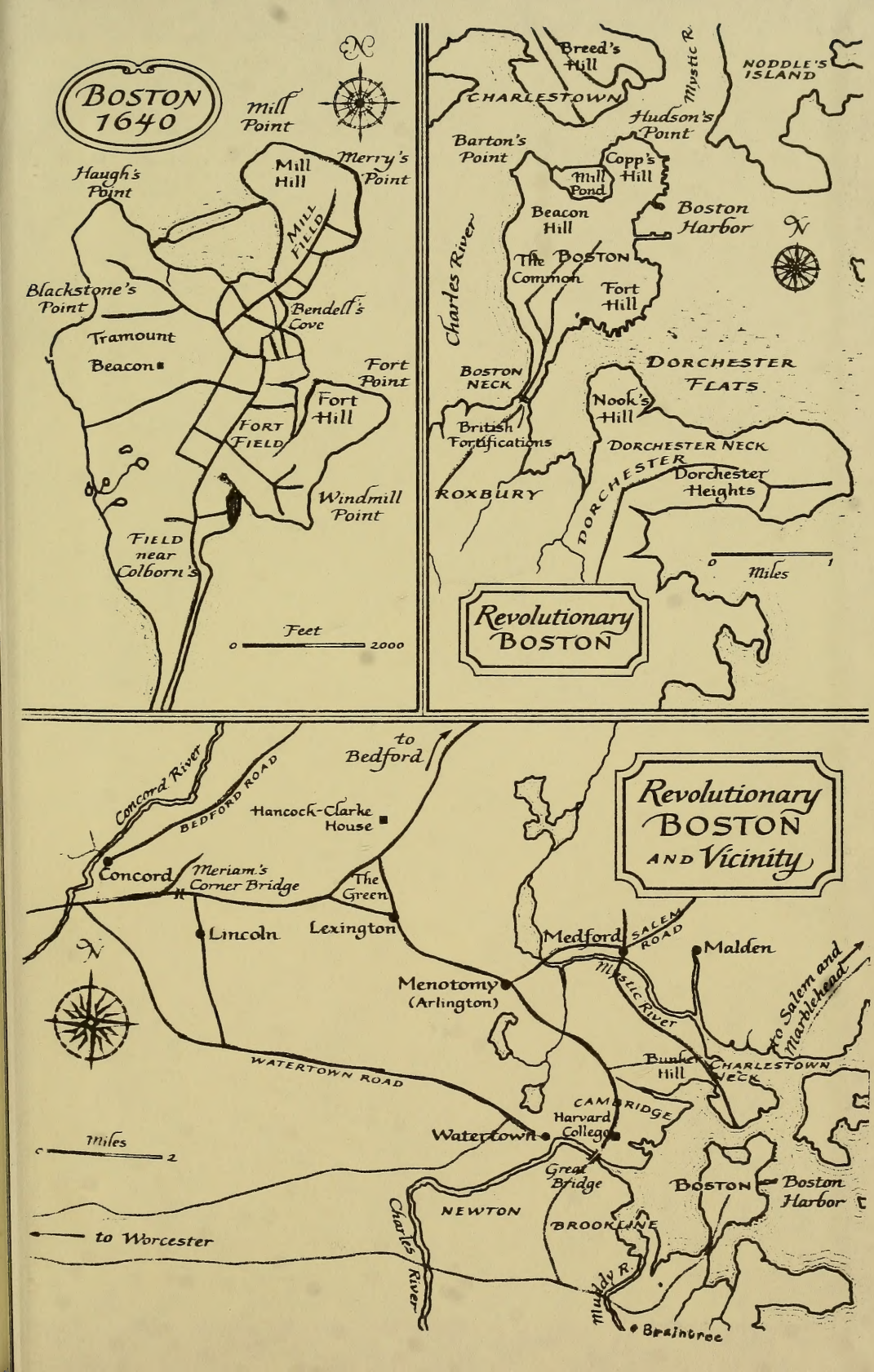
John 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 17, 20, 21, 22, 24, 26, 27
Katherine 21
Margaret 20
Moses 90
Richard 13
Samuel 90
Stephen 12, 13, 16, 17, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 28
Thomas 20, 24
Payne, Abial 168, 175, 176, 177, 177A, 179, 180, 181
Abiel B. 167
Alice 40, 177, 185
Almon 167, 169, 172
Angela 207
Cecylye 50
Charles 166
Christine Anne 225, 254A
Cicely 41
Claude 196, 202A
Claude B. 177, 197, 209
Claude Belmont 184, 185, 215, 219, 221
Clyde 196, 202A, 204A, 232, 254A
Clyde B. 189, 197, 204F, 214B, 217C, 217E, 217H, 228A
Clyde Burdette 201, 202, 208, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 221
Clyde W. 217H, 228A, 239
Clyde William 224, 252
Dennys 40
Diana 167
Elijah 167
Elizabeth 32, 33, 34, 40, 55, 58
Elyzabethe 50
Emeline 178
Esther 184, 184A
Flora 176
Florence 177
Frederick Wells 166
George 166, 176
Gerald 254A
Gerald Scott 225
Godleve 33
Grace 54, 58
Henry 178
Henry Clay 165
Imogene 166, 184C, 197
Jack 228A
Jacqueline 207
James 254A
James Marshall 225
Jane 42, 45, 50, 51, 54, 58, 61
Jeffrey 254A
Jeffrey A. 228A
Jeffrey Alan 224
Jennie O. 177
Joane 34
Joce 58
Johane 32
John 31, 32, 33, 35, 37, 39, 40, 42, 45, 49, 50, 54, 58, 60, 64, 204B, 217H
John (Jack) Briggs 207, 208, 214
John B. 221, 228A, 239
John Burdette 206, 207
Joseph 112, 163, 164, 168, 169, 171, 172, 176, 179, 180
Joseph Scott 225, 254A
Joyce 54
Julia 167
Julius 195
Julius Melvin 177
Katherin 58
Katherine 54
Kimberly 207
Laura 177B, 180, 181
Laura (Lorissa) 177
Lewis 177
Lucinda 167
Mahala 176, 179, 181
Margaret 40, 41
Margarette 50
Marshall 204B, 207, 208, 214, 217H
Marshall B. 177, 178, 180, 183, 184, 184A, 186, 187, 188, 189, 194, 195, 196, 198, 212, 215, 219, 221
Marshall F. 221, 224B, 224C, 228A, 236A

Marshall Frank 206, 223, 224, 226, 229, 232, 233, 234, 238, 246, 247, 248
Mary 40
Mary Eliza 166
Matilda 176
Maurine 202, 203, 204, 204B, 204C, 204F, 205, 206, 208, 217H, 222, 239
Moses 55, 56, 59, 64, 94, 95, 96, 139, 141, 166
Nancy 228A
Nancy Louise 207
Nicholas 41, 42, 53, 54, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65
Nycolas 50
Olive 194
Orrin Pierre 165, 167
Orville 166
Patricia Lee 225, 232
Peggy 204C
Peter 40
Polly 167, 172
Ransom 179
Ransom M. 177
Rebekka 207
Richard 228A
Robert 40
Roberte 50
Samuel 112, 139, 141, 142, 144, 164, 165, 168
Stephen 60
Stephen Michael 225, 254A
Tabitha 55, 59, 62, 63
Thomas 54, 55
Vesta 176, 179
William 55, 58, 167, 168, 233
Zebulon 157, 158
Payson, Samuel 104
Peirce, Thomas 125
Pemerton, James 105
Peniman, Mary 111
Samuel 111
Penniman, --- 83
Abiel 130
Bethiah 130
Ellinor 130
Hannah 130
James 92
Mary 110, 112, 113
Samuel 83, 90, 130
Peoter 94
Pette, John 51
Pettis, Content 169
Stephen 169
Pettit, Chloe 177
Enoch 177
James 177
Philip 98
Philip, King 123
Philip the Fair, of France 6
Phillip 102, 103
Phillip, Benjamin 148, 156
King 120
Phillips, --- 177
Charles 198
Silvester 159
Zachary 125
Phips, Soloman 104
Solomon 125
Pierce, --- 118
Mary 115, 117, 141
Pierpont, J. E. 192
John Eagar 191
Pinder, John 104
Pitt, William 150, 153
Pollard, Samuel 124
Pometacom 98
Porter, Elisha 148, 156
Powell, H. S. 192
Margaret 106
Moses 107
Sarah 110, 112
Thomas 106
Prentice, --- (Capt.) 122, 123
Thomas 102, 120, 121
Putnam, Lucina 165
Lucinda 167
Quashaamiit 93, 94, 95, 96
Quashoamitt 92
Quincey, John 139, 141
Quincy, --- 83
Edmund 74, 85, 86, 87, 92

Judith 74, 85, 89
Quinsey, Co. 89
Edmond 82
Ravinscroft, Anthony 125
Reade, William 126
Reader, Walter 40
Reder, Richard 41
Regimant, Ephraim 105
Reve, James 34
Richard, Duke of York 35
Richard III, King 35
Richardson, Pearl 210
Stephen 126
Robert the Duke 6
Roberts, Margery 74
Rogers, Grace 206
Rolf, Duke of Normandy 1
Rollo, Duke of Normandy 1
Roosevelt, Eleanor 205
Franklin 205
Ruggles, Joseph 160A
Samuel 144
Susanna 137, 138
Susannah 130, 139
Rugles, John 111
Salhoff, H. F. (Mrs.) 233
Sanders, John 83
Josiah 152
Martin 111
Saunder, Modre 33
Savel, Samuel 140
Savell, Samuel 118
Savil, --- (Dr.) 144
Savill, Samuel 111
Sawin, Joseph 110
Sayer, Margery 21
Schleder, Jean 207
Scofield, Shadrach 168
Scott, Benjamin 124
Richard 104
Seauitt, H. 161
Sewell, Samuel 131
Sheafe, Elizabeth 74
Richard 74
Silsby, --- (Capt.) 169
Skinner, Abraham 125
Small, --- 77
Smith, Ebnesar 160
Snow, Jabez 154
Snyder, Sandra 239
Spear, --- 83
Ebenezer 90
Nathiel 90
Stephen, Melatiah 152
Sumner, Samuel 105
Syhy, Denis 104
Tant, Jonathan 151
Taylor, Hugh 104
John 33, 34
Tertius, Joseph Neal 144
Thatcher, Samuel 103
Thayer, --- 83
Elijah 150
Ephraim 142
John 140, 141, 150
Nathaniel 140
Peter 150
Richard 150
Thomas Indian 124
Thompson, Benjamin 85
Samuel 83
Ting, William 82
Tolman, John 105
Tompson, Samuel 111
Tower, John 152
Turner, John 21
Seth 150
Susanne 21
Turtle, John 105
Twelve, Robert 105, 106
Twelves, Robert 83, 92
Upanbohqeen 96
Upanbohqueen 93, 94, 95
Veasey, Ellen 115, 129, 130
William 83, 129
Veazie, --- 83
Vesey, John 140
Vial, Hezekiah 168
Wadsworth, Hannah 116
Wagaman, Cynthia 254A
Cynthia Marie 225
Margaret 225

Mello 225
Wait, Abigail 176
Wales, --- 83
Walker, Henry 168
Thomas 77, 106, 107
Wasson, James Leroy 224
Margaret 228A
Margaret Jean 224
Peggy 254A
Water, William 65
Waterbury, David 168
Watterman, --- (Mrs.) 195
Webb, --- 19, 20, 83
Benjamin 90, 140
Christopher 83
John 20, 24, 111
Jonathan 116
Webbe, Nicholas 25
Thomas 28
Weld, Daniel 88, 96
White, --- 83
Ebenezer 140
John 150
Samuel 142
Thomas 90, 111
Whiting, Lydia 76
Samuel 125
Whitney, -- 178
John 178
Methe 178
Walter 190
Wild, --- 83
Samuel 140
Williams, Ebenezer 104
Ephraim 160
Samuel 104
Wilson, --- (Mr.) 75
John 125
Winter, John 105
Winthrop, --- (Gen.) 81
John 78, 79
Wolfe, --- 153
Wood, Richard 65
Woodcock, --- 103
Charles 176
George 190
Harvey 181
Harvey Patton 176
John 102
Joseph (Mrs.) 195
Woods, Elizah 190
Wright, Georg 83
Wyborne, George 21
Wycliffe, --- 22
Young, Anne 55
Ansel 225
Earl 195
Imogene 178, 184, 184A, 188, 189, 196, 197, 211, 204F, 215
Imogene Julia 184
Isaac 170
Jane 55
Janet 225
John 55, 184A, 190A, 204F
John H. 189, 215
Nicholas 54
Rebecca 254A
Rebecca Bernice 224, 225
Thomas 54
Will 195
Younge, Anne 62
Jane 62
John 61
Thomas 61, 62


COLONIAL
Massachusetts
AND New England
Indian Villages
Puritan Villages
Old Praying Towns
Approximate Tribal Boundaries
ABENAKI
[MAINE]
[NEW HAMPSHIRE]
[VERMONT]
Connecticut R.
Merrimack R.
Atlantic Ocean
PENNACOOKS
Pawtucket
Ipswich
Wamesitt
Cape Ann
Chelmsford
Nashobah
Salem
Deerfield
Lancaster
Concord
[MASSACHUSETTS]
Sudbury
Cambridge
Massachusetts Boston Bay
Marlboro
Hadley
Natick
NIPMUCS
Northampton
Ashfield
Magunkaquog
Wessagusett
Punkapog
Conway
Hassawesitt
Springfield
MASSACHUSETTS
Duxbury
Plymouth
[CONNECTICUT]
Cape Cod Bay
Taunton
[RHODE ISLAND]
Rehoboth
WAMPANOAGS
Providence
Ipswich
Hartford
MOHEGANS AND PEQUOTS
Aptuxcet
Trading Post
Mt. Hope
Wethersfield
NARRAGANSETTS
New London
Newport
New Haven
Narragansett Bay
MARTHA'S VINEYARD
NANTUCKET ISLAND
BLOCK ISLAND
Miles
LONG ISLAND


BOSTON 1640
Mill Point
Haugh's Point
Mill Hill
Merry's Point
Mill Field
Blackstone's Point
Bendell's Cove
Tramount
Beacon
Fort Point
Fort Hill
Fort Field
Windmill Point
Field near Colborn's
Feet
0
2000
Revolutionary BOSTON
Breed's Hill
CHARLESTOWN
Mystic R.
NODDLE'S ISLAND
Hudson's Point
Barton's Point
Copp's Hill
Mill Pond
Beacon Hill
Boston Harbor
Charles River
The Boston Common
Fort Hill
DORCHESTER FLATS
BOSTON NECK
Nook's Hill
British Fortifications
DORCHESTER NECK
ROXBURY
DORCHESTER
Dorchester Heights
0
1
Miles
Revolutionary BOSTON AND Vicinity
to Bedford
Concord River
BEDFORD ROAD
Hancock-Clarke House
Concord
Meriam's Corner Bridge
The Green
Lincoln
Lexington
Medford
SALEM ROAD
Malden
Menotomy (Arlington)
Mystic River
to Salem and Marblehead
Bunker Hill
CHARLESTOWN NECK
WATERTOWN ROAD
CAMBRIDGE
Harvard College
Watertown
Miles
0
2
Great Bridge
BOSTON
Boston Harbor
NEWTON
BROOKLINE
to Worcester
Charles River
Muddy R.
Braintree